

11/13/1915 Left Wgtn x Great crowds x People gave soldiers flowers, eatables, etc x Not great deal [Too] cheering along streets but great enthusiasm on wharf, especially! as troopships were leaving x Howie, Willie, Misses Thornton, Rigby & Robertson were on the wharf x Willie sent me up a champagne cork, & also £1 note to buy a bottle to put it in x Also mementos from the ladies x Cut off some buttons & my hat badge and sent them down x Anchored in stream for some time, & Nikau on way to Nelson steamed round us & lot of cheering led by Willie x also noticed Dudley Edwards & Miss Kitching (Diocesan office) x Found that our (Srgts) accommodation not very good & found another bunk for myself (we were all fixed up in good quarters next day) x Soon after 6 cleared for Lyttleton x arrived about 8.30, very smooth trip x Big crowd on wharf x Cheers. Entrained 9 x 0 at Ch/ch immense crowds enthusiastic reception x Marched through to Cranmer Sq, where church service held x Nell & Tommie found me out x also saw Wallace and [Nancy], of Motueka x Did not hear any of the service x At railway station apples handed round very acceptable x on train again G. 1 o'clock off to Lyttleton

11/15/1915 Still smooth; ran into a little rain about 10, the coast was hazy x No drill; Dunedin men very interested passing their coast; many glasses picking up points x In afternoon helped to sort out parcels put on board; terrible lot x Got mine all right, filling a potato sack x Not long before the chaps were feeding, & if none of us are sick tomorrow 'twill be a miracle x Great excitement opening different packages x Oat cakes from Kit, pickles, paste, cake, dates, chocolate; sweets from Miss Warne; rolly polly from Mother x Have not opened up others yet x We ought to live well during next few weeks x When off Dog Island Lighthouse about 4 pm Wanaka passed going North x Dipped her flag & blew blast; we cheered x Strong head winds all day, fair sea on in Foveaux Strait x Will get our last sight of good old N.Z. tonight x Very cold in the evening; must be an iceberg floating round x Glorious sunset, streaks of gold; & Stewart Island coated in purple glow x Balaclava hats caps very useful now x Band on board x Thousands Mother Carey's chickens x Dog Island light winking out good-bye to us x

11/16/1915 Bitterly cold; must be several "bergs" loose somewhere x Mittens & caps & warmer under-clothing x Saw first albatross x very windy, fair sea on x Had mother's rolly-polly for tea; very good x Spent most time in bed reading Grand Babylon Hotel (Arnold Bennett) Tofua plugging along some distance on port bow; cloudy day, with snatches sunshine x Eating well! x

11/17/1915 Much warmer; but still strong wind, half a - gale x. Tofua came up alongside in the evening x No drill; bit of a sea on, & Tofua making hard work of it x No drill x

11/18/1915 Sea increased during night; tossed about x In morning still pretty rough, & last sight of Tofua x Circled round & picked her up x came close enough to exchange yells, & made a break in the monotony of things x Sea came through port hole of next cabin, right thro' door and flooded opposite cabin without touching as it passed through x Sea increased - in evening, & (8:30) old packet is tossing about like a cork x Did not miss a meal, but not feeling as brisk as usual x

11/19/1915 very rough night; forecastle swamped x Seas very high x One struck half-way up funnel x The port dormitory was stove in during the morning, making things very unpleasant x Tofua not in sight; and reported she had rough time x Soon got about that we would put into Hobart for repairs and this proved correct, land being sighted after dinner - a very steep point, with a lighthouse on x On entering the Derwent passage the Iron Pot Lighthouse, on a little island something like a clay bank x It is said that in the convict days the worst prisoners were put on this island x Going down harbour, with land on both sides, was very charming; Passed orchards & farms x Hilly place, with slopes falling gently to seashore x Passed residential suburbs; very nice farms and well laid out grounds x The roads were made by convict labour; also a shot pour tower which is a prominent landmark x Tofua got alongside about 8, great cheering x Anchored - in stream for night; bright moonlight x Got to wharf 6:30 Saturday morning x Quite in love with Hobart; built on hill x Country wooded, in here and there a clearing which makes picturesque landscape x Everyone looking forward to a run ashore in the

- 11/20/1915 Went ashore this morning for route march x The men came back laden and decorated with flowers x At breakfast this morning a crown came off one of my teeth, and I got a pass to go into town & have it fixed up x Had a good time in the morning with some lady friends x Had dinner & tea at Imperial x Nice waitresses x Afternoon went to gardens; strawberries & cream etc. Night time went to Theatre went to earlier boarded boat soon after 11, after "great" day x The men were advanced general leave from 1 until 7; my pass enabled me to stay in town longer x The prettiest part of Hobart is going down the Derwent x Town itself rather old - fashioned; no bustle x Tram cars have "verandahs" on top x Not up to N.Z. ones. Few decent buildings; but lots of small ones; quaint looking some of them & must have been built in the very early days of the settlement x Town is be placed on side of hill; at the back big clay patches show which does not improve beauty of town x All the houses and other buildings erected either in brick or stone; many shingle roofs, looking much! worse for age x Hotels very poor; did not see one to come up to the Commercial in looks x Great numbers of them
- 11/21/1915 Was awakened at 5 by gentle movement of boat x Looking through port hole could see the reserves and gardens as we passed by x Lovely morning; but after getting out in open strong wind x Church parade x Chaplain spoke about Jacob x afternoon strong head wind x
- 11/22/1915 Rough and cold; had to turn round & pick up Tofua x Spent most time in bunk reading & sleeping x Nothing doing x

11/23/1915 Best day since day after leaving Ch/ch x Sea comparatively calm - sunshine now & again x Did little drills, signalling etc. In change of guard; rotten job x Passed several whales x Tofua kept up with us all day x Got swag which went aboard Tofua by mistake x

11/24/1915 Lovely calm day; best since leaving N. Z. x Drawn up syllabus for drill, & will be able to adhere to it weather permitting x More whales x Posted letter home.

11/25/1915 Another glorious day; made 320 miles - the record so far x Opened the parcel from Thornton's - socks, chocolate, mouth organ (made in Germany with a request to return it to the maker at the first opportunity, a book, "Heart of the Sunset" (Rex Beach) soap, a parcel not to be opened until Christmas, & a thumping big cake x Wrote and thanked them x Also wrote to Putty x Expect to reach Albany tomorrow [NOTE - at Hobart posted letter to mother, Kit and Howie, also p.c to Rogers (3) Effie, Ray, Patty, Aubrey, Miss Warne (thanking her for sweets) and Nell]

11/26/1915 Glorious day x Sighted Australian coast 9:45 x Low lying hills in the haze, other points soon showing up x One of the hills from distance was not unlike miniature Mt Egmont x Closer view resemblance faded; clay formation, big bare patches x Approaching outer harbour Saw a whaler; had one in tow and was after another which we could see spouting & every now & then a splash denoting discharge of harpoon x Country Limestone x Two harbours x outer harbour saw whaling station; one ship & whale looked like several steam lawn trawlers x Pretty going down land-locked harbour; only stunted scrub on land; sand beaches dazzling white x Lighthouse at entrance outer harbour x At inner harbour entrance not unlike French Pass, narrow passage - way between island & mainland x One of islands huge dome - shape, glacier formation, & waveworn x Tied up to pier 12:30 x Land round harbour covered with wooden slabs - diamond - shaped, etc; tell me survey marks and also guides to small boats x Picked up Naval transport- officer & health officer before berthing x Route Route march at 3; & leave from 5 until 9 x Albany built side small petit low lying hill, about 2

11/27/1915 Finished coaling x at wharf all day x Instead of giving men a march we simply did a little drill on wharf x An infantryman took a fit or something & was carried aboard unconscious x Left wharf 2 pm; Major Ross, several other officers, picquet & others too late, & had to come off later in launch. Brilliant example of military ways: Had to transfer band to Tofua & 26 men from Tofua to Willochra x Instead of this being done while boats were alongside each other, not done till both out in stream, & have to go in launch x 0000 Sailed at 6, Tofua leading x During day an Australian transport put in & left two sick men; fine vessel 12,000 tonner it is said x We also left an artilleryman (Bryant) behind for medical treatment x Got xmas cards & posted 2 doz to friends & relatives x Played deck cricket at night; one of the batsmen let fly & bat went overboard; have others x Bowled three men out in an over; survived only 3 balls myself x Two weeks since leaving Wellington x In outer harbour passed SS [Tultalla] of Glasgow



11/28/1915 9pm x The end of a perfect day x Cloudless sky; gentle swell, deep blue overhead & beneath. Cape Leewin in view until about noon & then faded in haze; last land to be seen for 3 weeks church in morning; piano & violin padre preached from bridge; men on boat deck; sun brilliant; hardly enough wind to blow smoke away x Sermon 9th Luke 57v x Service also at night; electric bulbs fixed up; nurse at piano x Stars peeping out x Weather warmer; sun beautiful sight as went out of sight x Early morning passed Australian hospital ship Huntilla in distance, probably from Freemantle x Saw hundreds of dolphins; also flying fish x Read "Heart of the Sunset" (Rex Beach)

11/29/1915 Quiet day; calm, cloudy sky x Lecture by medical officers morning; afternoon washing day; evening concert; orderly sergt x

11/30/1915 Weather getting warmer every day; foretaste of what is to come in the tropics x awnings put over boat deck x Was vaccinated; nothing to worry about so far x All lights are now to be put out 8pm x Said to be in danger zone x Jolly nuisance x orchestral concert at night x Read "A Man's Man" (Hay); piffle

- 12/1/1915 Measles on board in forward part ship x Warm & calm x Soon be running round with nothing on x Left off wearing socks x Concert in evening; good x Have seen no sign of bird life for some days x Finished reading "Barbara of the Snows" (Greene); very good x
- 12/2/1915 Ships officers appeared in white ducks; sure sign of approaching Tropics x Calm x Read "Mr Wingrave Millionaire"; read before; interesting x Rough House in sergt's quarters at night x Tarpaulin baths fixed up on deck x Arm itching like blazes x
- 12/3/1915 another ideal day; all chaps have cut down trousers to make them shorts x Singlets & shorts all a chap needs from dewy morning till eve x Sports great success; commenced 9; finished after 5; finals tomorrow. Tug-of-war, quoits, obstacles, cosh - fighting etc x Won heat quoits; went to sleep after dinner & missed final; won N.C.Os obstacle race; lost a lot of skin & smothered with treacle x Good fun all day x Night dark masses clouds high up on horizon; beautiful purple after-glow; one star shining in [auld] probably Venus x very little twilight; quite dark 7.30 x [Miss] this hot weather new spuds, lettuce etc x Saw a bird - first for some days x Had supper in Esq - cabin - herrings in tomato sauce, bread & butter; jelly, peaches, condensed milk, cake & lemon squash; most of us had nightmares & little wonder x

12/4/1915 Misty & showery early morning; but later, beautiful day x Thousands flying fish mostly small ones x Turned back for Tofua & let her get well ahead, but abeam her in evening x sports continued x Glorious sunset: dark masses clouds like rugged mountains, lake blue; sun showing gold through pass of clouds; & also shining just where clouds touched water x Beneath dark mass clouds sun showed up dull red; & just before disappearing lingered for a second in a dazzling [glimmer] of gold x Watched it for 1/2 hour; & lasted over an hour x All the "mountain" tops were touched with fire x Splendid concert on deck x Three weeks out from Wellington x Read "The Pomp of the Lavilletes" (Gilbert Parker); decent yarn x

12/5/1915 Quite a heavy shower about 6 am; but thereafter beautiful day; sea calmer if anything x Rumour that man went overboard 11.45 last night x He ran through artillery dormitory yelling, & then disappeared x Boat put back, but saw nothing x Roll call first thing; rumoured artilleryman missing x Turned out to be false alarm x Service in morning; sermon from x Evening went to song service conducted by Capt Neville. M & S hymns; Eternal Father; Where is my boy tonight; Nearer my God" x Another fine sunset x Read "Pursuit of Mr Faviel" (Vernede); good yarn x Following notice posted up:

4th Dec

Ocean Letter

Marconi - Tele[fukin] System

Office of Origin: Equator via Eastern [-----] x Urgent

Time sent out: Midnight

HMNZT No 35 advise responsible parties am to arrive to end of week to hold court to deal with half arses in my dominion for the first time x Make full arrangements

Neptune

Rolled oats for breakfast; plenty of weavils; (sic) sorted out 1/2 doz -spoon-fuls when extra fat insect made me surrender x

12/6/1915 Another scorcher x Washing day x Good sunset; silver effect x Tropical shower as sun went down; orchestral concert night x Coaled ship; 2/- day extra - £ worth that much an hour x Washing day x Sun is now almost directly overhead by 11 o'clock x

12/7/1915 Slept on deck last night. Shower at midnight made me change my quarters x Great sunrise x Saw two or three birds; must either be near land or are a long way from home x Interesting Hamilton was the subject x lecture Capt Kemp circulatory system. Tofua been keeping pace with us for two or three days x Magnificent sunset; Beautiful pink hue would come and go; then sunset gold, then deeper pink tint on distant clouds x Concert night x orderly sergeant x Read "Byways" (Robt Hichens); not too good x Change of wind; much cooler x Orderly Sgt

12/8/1915 Not much doing x Was ships orderly sergt x Very calm x Magnificent sunset; wonderful tints x We are now about 7 1/2 hours behind NZ time x New moon.

12/9/1915 Still calm; nice breeze x Glorious sunrise; & even more glorious sunset x Hazy clouds x Shafts of pink, interspersed with blue shot out from a base of molten gold x Lasted for over hour, after darkness fell x Most wonderful one I have seen x Moonlight x

Following wireless from Neptune x "Expect to arrive 10th, doz one thirty & are all summonses issued - Neptune x "

Concert at night x Posted letters to Mother, Kit, Howie, Patty, Cora, Mrs Blair, U.G, Sister, Uncle Geo, Eccus, Blanche x Nell, Hobart, (-----,) Mrs Blackburne

12/10/1915 Nep. came on board, Great fun - calmest of days x Hamilton as a 'lady' made a great hit. Warrant issued for my arrest but could not be found x Fine Sunset x Night very hot x

12/11/1915 Fine sunrise x Was Breeze freshened in afternoon & looked as if storm coming x Only got a little shower, after tea x Clouds too thick for sun to come through x about 7 lights of vessel seen on starboard; but quickly disappeared x Orderly Sergeant x four weeks from Wellington

12/12/1915 Change in weather last night; strong wind & heavier sea x Church x Evening went to Capt Neville's song service x Very enjoyable x Before his address spoke right to the point of the temptations in Cairo, & made strong appeal to men to behave as such x "Jesu Lover of my Soul", "Where is my boy," "Nearer my God", "Abide with me" some of the hymns x —

12/13/1915 Daybreak found land on the port quarter. Cape — Gard de Fue (Italian [Sonaliame]) - Barren stretch of hills, jutting out boldly to sea at the Cape x Hills continued for some miles, then a low stretch of beach, on which was apparently a native village, as a long row of what looked like square huts could be seen through the glass x Further along could also see distinctly three buildings - of stone it looked like - bigger there were wells sunk by exploring parties x than the rest x An Arab dhow was sailing along the coast, & could see more at anchor opposite the village x Sea has turned to a dirty looking green, but is more transparent than the deep blue x Saw several sharks & also flock of birds - black ones like shags x About 10am ran into huge school of porpoise x At first sight I thought it was a reef over which the sea was breaking x There were thousands and thousands on both sides of the boat - the water was simply a black mass for several of 100's yards x Could see them for quite long time on port starboard side after going through them churning up the still smooth water x Smoke of several boats also seen; two passed us going the other way & could see her plainly the

12/14/1915 when morning broke big 4-masted ship (the Seuvic) in port quarter; one of those we saw yesterday; other one not in sight x Passed two vessels before 10 going opposite vessel x At nine am land sighted starboard bow - what appeared to be a bushy hill could be seen through the haze; but on closer inspection was a mass of solid craggy rocks x Arabia x Aden heads we were told x Several seagulls same as N Z are flying about (9.45 am) also lot of smaller birds x Just noticed on horizon what appears to be three masts of sunken ship - just like sunken ship; but probably wireless station x On rocks seems to be a little village of some sort x Probably signal station Closer view of masts show big low red buildings x On rocks can be seen right on a peak what looks like huge round mud well or reservoir - in the distance looks like a castle x Several dhows - or their sails - can be seen, & near wireless station are several vessels & catamarans (fishing boats flying round; quite cockle - shells x Dropped anchor [----] midday; pilot came off; tug, natives; funny dress x Sent mail (about 10,000 letters) ashore, & sailed again about 3/4 hours later x Aden barren - looking; built in little bay on rocks x

12/15/1915 During the night - or early this morning we passed thro 'Hell's Gates, entrance to Red Sea x Only land to be seen were a group of rocky islands 12 apostles of volcanic formation, one lying low down looking just like the side of a crater x There was a lighthouse on one of them x Some say they are the 12 Apostles; but others say they are further ahead x about 10 we passed another small rocky island, with a lighthouse perched on top, & a little house nearby x The poor devil who looks after the light must have a rotten time x Just a minute ago a steamer the [Pako - Koto] passed us close enough for us to exchange cheers x There were Indian troops on board Imalians I expect x Boats are becoming as numerous as weavils in our porridge x This is a great trade route x Except for the islands we passed we were out of sight of land all day x In evening a locust flew on board & we captured it after a chase x very likely it has come from a passing steamer; long way from land x Steward said last time through lots came on board Nice warm night x Cloudless sky, golden sunset x

12/16/1915 Glorious day x Several steamers passed; one a hospital ship x Caught up to & passed the 4 master x at during afternoon saw mountains African soil - said to be 65 miles distant x Golden sunset; concert x Lecture Capt Kemp; first - aid x



12/17/1915 Before breakfast two steamers passed us within a mile x One was a two funnelled, with deck accommodation the whole length of the huge structure - it looked like a great blotch of black with the sun shining on it x At 10.30 an oilboat the Wabash passed us close enough to read her name x Dirty looking Gave her a cheer - at this time I noticed eight ships in sight - some of them on the horizon x We were then passing a lighthouse stuck on a long reef right in our track x The reef was awash and a long railing ran up from the edge to the building x Horribly lonely spot x Red bldg, with a white top, from which a flag was struck out on a stick x Range of mountains also loomed up on the African side x Before lunch a hospital ship passed us going East; there were now five vessels within a mile or so & all could be seen at once - quite a busy appearance x (12 noon) x about 5.30 passed another lighthouse on solid rock low down; another rock nearby just like hull of ship without masts etc x Same time 3 + master with 2 funnels went by x Doing about 13½ Knots x Mountains on African side x Served out with dry ration - biscuit & cheese - for train journey tomorrow x Concert &

12/18/1915 Left other boats astern during night x Saw sun rise behind Sinai - beautiful sight x Rays just touching rugged serrated mountains on African side, making them look like burnished copper x In Gulf of Suez, S waters becoming much narrower x Very lofty S rugged mountains African side running off into long sandy beach with lighthouse; then again more mountains x One range looks just like the colour of Dun Mountain x Passed before breakfast British Indian Coy boat - a small one x Dance S concert last night very good x x about 10 could see forest of masts S smoke from Suez x Dropped anchor 11.55 x Counted between 20 S 30 big liners, including four warships - two French, I think x Stopped just opposite shipping quarter of town Rocky hills on both sides gives way to sandy stretch in half circle where tower is x store bldgs white S cream; built tier like x Two parts of town old S new are shipping S other portion few miles away connected by roads over which cars were passing x [fury] coming out of desert Then beyond desert, glaring coppery colour x Big white oil tanks on beach x Can see vessels passing through Land from the West x Few trees about; otherwise barren waste

12/19/1915 (Sunday) - still on board; altho' Tofua berthed & subsequently saw long troop trains leaving x Said that no accommodation available; Soldier died on Persic; flags transport half-masted x Great sight watching unceasing passage of vessels thro' canal: see 'em three at a time, one behind other x Must have been over a dozen today x Two warships left - up canal x Ships coming down have lots of sandbags round chart house & bridge; rumours of dervish rising, & that we will be in action sooner than expected x Work going on as usual about the port x Two or three dhows came alongside, & a few officers went ashore x Woman, in European dress was in one dhow & number of laurels flying flag with my initials "C.S." x Must have known I was coming! Got London Daily Telegraphs of Dec 2 & 6; nothing of much importance in them x Read Kipling last article in one "The Fringe of the Fleet" x Hope to read them in book form later x Latest is that we disembark tomorrow x Transport arrived with Indian troops x Eighteen big ones at anchor x Church in morning sermon from Is: To trust in shadow of "Egypt" x Mentioned how much a good knowledge of scripture

12/20/1915 alongside wharf shortly after nine x Go through narrow entrance to big basin x No wharves as we know them just big stone slabs as breastwork x Boat about 20 ft from wharf x Lots of natives about after backsheesh x Police wear fezs (red) & use sticks freely on natives if in the way x (Incident) All kinds of dresses x Egyptian with fezs & European clothes, others fez & flowing robes, others with turbans (all colours) & robes x Two or three Indian troops smart handsome looking chaps, Huge stores of coal at wharf x Saw camels x [c-----]; minarets of mosques natives pushing carriages, cooking etc; babel voices x smart little Egyptian; (Moses) great toff x Rly, on wharf x Good old British bulldog strolled along: every chap started to whistle him & and he showed his teeth as much as to say "please to see ya x "Railway carriages comfortable inside: dirty looking outside x NCO's have 2nd class: looking glass in it x Natives fooling round brushing seats, & wanting to take off our haversacks x etc, money is all they want x Just met Billy Derwent; went with the Fifth, got wounded Dardanelles; going back Willochra x Supposed to leave at 2, but block on line delayed until 4 x Then off we

12/21/1915 Fooled about till near noon: then drafted to 4th Howitzer ammunition Column; field movement afternoon x Met lots of chaps x Went into Cairo night; rang up Jean Ingram at Ponta Kubo Hospital; Nurse B, returned to N Z x

12/22/1915 Went to Heliopolis to see Nurse Ingram x Had a jolly good day x Got garrie & after beating down the driver to 15 pt went sight-seeing x Matarieh ostrich of Goshen, Joseph Israelites & [Ileviks]; still making [Ileviks] x Saw one of the obelisks to the entrance of the temple of Ra, where Joseph said to be sold into slavery x One solid slab of granite, with hieroglyphics, Key of Life, sacred Hawk x 18 metres high x Waterwheels x Then saw tree where Mary sat with child when Herod was slaying first born x The tree has been killed by cutting names on it x Date trees 100 years old x Mary's well; had a drink x Water wheel there x Beautiful Catholic Church x Going along road "Hullo Gíg" - [Brian Dickens] x Garry had to stop to let troops go by; Hullo Hullo who's your lovely friend by chaps come over [ur] in Willochra x In evening went to Cairo shopping x Grand street & shops x Bought toys x Dinner at Hotel Metropolis 8 x Nurse Smaile (?) (sic) knew Rachel, same table x No Menu x People smoke; when finished ladies too x Quite jolly to have a Nelson lady friend to speak to x shops full toys x Heliopolis desert 7 years ago; built by Belgian Syndicate x Met Farmer Sgt Watson x Boat block "

12/23/1915 nothing doing x Riding & harness cleaning x Heard about evacuation of Suvla Bay & Anzac x Met several chaps back from there - Lucre McConchie, etc x

12/24/1915 Christmas Eve x Thinking of all at home x Off at 1 pm & went to Pyramids with Toby Anderson in tram car x Guides nuisance x Got one shamble Charlie x Some Irrigation x "Lord Kitchener make all people rich x I know S. Winston Churchill & Jack Johnson" x Where best man I asked "Kitchener" who met, W.C. who met J.J. x Numbers of natives with canes & donkeys at pyramids; bother you a lot Had photo taken on donkeys in front of Sphinx; went into Temple of Sphinx; slabs of solid granite 16 x 16 x Rode round Pyramids; very high; rugged rough vultures x Back to town; had dinner at Savilles 8 ps x soup, fish, chicken & spuds x Met Nurse Ingram in town x Shops closed 8.30; big crowd x Home 10 x Rained nearly all evening x On way to Pyramids met native funeral; Men two by two singing & walking; then coffin born on bier & covered with pretty [noulle]; then two donkey carts full of women dressed in black x

12/25/1915 Beautiful day x but air very keen in morning x Officers N.C.O.'s & men messed together at dinner, which consisted of poultry, pork, spuds, cauliflower, spuds, pastry, fruit duff beer, etc x Sat next to Bill Lucre & opposite Fatty Watson, with McConchie behind me x Few toast lists x In afternoon went to Pont Kubbeh Hospital (N Z General); afternoon tea with Nurse Ingram; met Trott Chapman, Rowlands, Gilbert, Richards, Newton x Back to camp to dinner at night at Serpts Mess similar to midday meal x First thing morning received letters from Patty, Mother & Ray; jolly glad to get them x At night stopped in camp & wrote x Another battle of "Wasser"

12/26/1915 Church parade in morning; singing no good x In afternoon went to Gardens with Llewellyn and Anderson x Very good; all kinds of animals snakes, birds, etc x Had afternoon among trees & overlooking lake with lot of birds around about x Tea in town after running all over show for it; finished up at an Italian cafe & had chips & fish, bottle wine & bananas (2 for 1 P) cost 8 pt x Home early x Tired x

12/27/1915 Quiet day x Saw for first time a biplane, high up like a huge bird, & appearing to move slowly x

12/28/1915 nothing doing x Went to Heliopolis in Evening

12/29/1915 Same as yesterday

12/30/1915 Same as yesterday

- 12/31/1915 New Year's Eve x Route march thro Heliopolis x camp at night x Home 10 o'clock, Letters from Mother & Howie when got home x Convivial time in tent x Letters from Effie, Cora & Miss Robertson
- 1/1/1916 New Year's Day x Riding exercise; morning mosques & tent in citadel in afternoon x
- 1/2/1916 N.Z. General Hospital in afternoon; Heliopolis in evening; service at American Mission; cut from Jeremiah (6)
- 1/3/1916 orderly NCO for week Received book of letter cards from Mother x Rain & very cold
- 1/4/1916 Rained very steadily all night; with weather very cold x Showers at intervals x Wrote several p.c. & letters to Twinnies & E.B.
- 1/5/1916 Weather still cold & windy x
- 1/6/1916 Weather still cold & windy x
- 1/7/1916 Brigade orderly Sergt
- 1/8/1916 Transferred as [Bomb] to a sub-sec B, A, C, x Rode to NZ Hospital in afternoon x Passed funeral x First carriage with [parsius] in (by look of them) then what looked like a state carriage, drawn by four grey horses covered with gold - braided cloths x The hearse of gilt & covered with purple ribbon x Thought it was The Sultan out for a drive until I saw the coffin x Saw Nurse Ingram, not yet fit for duty; coming for drink with me tomorrow Back to camp early and stayed in x



- 1/9/1916 Beautiful morning & weather nice & warm after cold snap x Church parade morning; singing an improvement x Sermon fun the hymn "Fight the Good fight" x Good sermon In afternoon went for drive with Sister Ingram x Had a lovely time; sister is a jolly good guide, and unlike the dirty niggers, does not ask for any piastres! Drove to Cairo; then around Gezira x Passed over bridge built by Kitchener; guarded both approaches by two life - sized bronze lions; look the very symbol of power & strength x Felt quite a sense of security when I saw them x Then passed along bank of Nile under tree-covered street; very pretty x Passed beautiful gardens; magnificent palm & date trees x Date trees trunks white & long & look in distance like white marble pillars x Fruit grows in clusters x Passed golf links (wd have liked a round) tennis courts, race course x Passed palace built by Khedive for Empress Eugene when she came to open Suez Canal x also place where Kitchener lived; but now occupied by Sir Henry Macmahon, (sic) High Comsnr x very plain - looking building x Back to Cairo in afternoon tea at Nurse's Empire Club x House belonged to a prince & has been lent free
- 1/10/1916 Mounting & Dismounting x Picture show (Tivoli) with Pompey at night x Very warm day x Full dress parade morning x
- 1/11/1916 same as yesterday x About all we do is to groom & exercise horses x See aeroplanes every day
- 1/12/1916 striking & pitching tents x Harnessing; field manoeuvres x Others to move off on Saturday
- 1/13/1916 Same as yesterday x Got letters & photo from Mother (2) Ray (2) Kit; Pickles, Walice, Aunty, & Uncle George x Horse line picquet x

1/14/1916 Struck camp & slept in mess tent x Crowd raised canteens x Awakened soon after 10 by awful yelling of a nigger as if he was being murdered x Then lot of chaps came into mess room & soon after two officers & a nigger holding big lantern came in & looked all through x (heard later that a case of tobacco was brought in; also that a barrel of beer was taken from wet canteen, & chocolate etc x Awakened again soon after 12 by more yelling; some of the chaps were roused up & put on special picquet x Later was told that Canteen people put in bill for £120 damage x One of the Sgts (Fellow) got two or three plugs in the jaw from someone x

1/15/1916 up 4.30 watered & fed & breakfast all in dark x Moved off at 7 to Zeitoun Siding, & entrained horses etc x Moved off at 9.15 for Ismailiah x Very long train x Passed for three or four hours green fields with date palms making pleasing break in landscape x Now & again nice looking house; plenty of native villages & graveyards; latter sorting of mud & some whitewashed x Curious relics all along line x Passed big stone quarries x Double line most of way & making preparation for triple line x At Tel-el-Kebir immense camp of Australians x Brought bread & jam with us & feed on train x Got oranges also x 5 or 4 one piastre x Arrived Ismailiah 12.45 Got out horses, wagons etc x Pitched tents; going until pretty late x Troops away every half an hour or so x Very long trains x Had scratch tea, bread, cheese, butter tea etc x The name of the locality is Moascar x Camp previously occupied by Bengal Lancers x Flying machines buzzing around x Make noise like chaffcutter x

1/16/1916 Getting first experience of active service conditions x Up at 6, water & feed horses; breakfast, stew x Not too much tucker x Had to parade g for inspection by General Murray x Great crowd troops x In afternoon fatigue work x After 5 before finished and then, instead of letting us get tea & fix things up next morning, brainless officers re-allocated tent & we had to shift all out gear etc; & it was dark before getting tea x Lot of swearing over it x Quite right too x It is little things like this that get a fellows back up x We are close to the canal, & from horseback can see the Bitter Lakes thro' which the ships pass, Two warships at anchor x Water beautiful blue; small sailing ships o boats look very pretty x In evening saw crowd Indian troops & mules arrive back from Dardanelles x Got equipment off very quickly, also mules, which wanted to roll as soon as detrained x Indians hung onto them well x Terrible lot of talking but got thro' work x Long way to go to water x Notice the railway lines are from Krupps

1/17/1916 Heavy showers in early morning x Put in as stable N.C.O. for week x Tucker not too good x Got last pound of butter in camp for our tent; no more for some time x Fatigue work for most of the crowd x Met Charlie Ricketts on station in evening, More troops arriving; also camels x Second Batln Trents arrive from Alexandria x Five warships in canal at night x Plenty of sand flying round & gets in food etc x Lot of wind so far x

1/18/1916 Cold & windy x shower early morning x Mostly fatigue work x Had a yarn to Charlie Ricketts x

1/19/1916 Bit of sunshine today x washed some clothes x Had a "few words" with our Corporal x Evening went to Infantry lines x Found out where Eccus's company was & asked a chap outside a tent if he knew Spear x "Whose asking for Spear?" enquired a voice from within x "His brother" says I x Come in says he x It was Sergt Dean, one of Eccus' pals, who was reported killed, a bullet grazed his forehead x We were both equally pleased to meet one another x Had a yarn: am going to look him up again x Asked after Howie x Also saw a chap named Height, who said he knew Norris in Motueka x Fred McKee was away on four day's leave x Beautiful sunset in fact both morning & evening the sun throws out a picture x slight sore throat x

1/20/1916 Got a gargle for throats x In evening went to Nelson Infantry lines & saw Hopp, Israel, Oldershaw, Sloan & several other Nelson boys x Gave me some baksheesh chocolate & condensed milk x Very acceptable x Troops & camels still arriving daily x Got letters from Uncle George & Aunt Amy x

1/21/1916 Letters from Mother (Dec 12) Aunty & Kit x

1/22/1916 Half holiday; went to Ismaïlia x Followed irrigation canal for short distance & then along native quarters x Then splendid hard road & into town x Called at Australian Hospital along with Toby Anderson & Geo Hirst x Donough, of Nelson in one of the wards, influenza x All shops closed until 5 x Passed a girls school & had a look at them thro' windows. Teachers wore square-shaped white caps x French quarter of town very good x streets lined both sides with trees x Some gardens very prettily laid out x Went through General Murray's grounds; also up to near banks canal x Lots of roses in gardens x Creeping flowers of vivid hues, climbing all over houses & up big trees x Beautiful sight x Scarlett, etc x Troops (Indian) camped all along irrigation canal x Motor lorries full flying all over place x Very clean place compared with Cairo, & not pestered so much in natives x Had to return by 5 x In evening went over to see Sergt Dean; he was out on town picquet x Saw Sergt Jock Allen; knows Eccus x Had a long & interesting yarn about Peninsula x Tommies there The Territorials there no good x Gave me some chocolate x Told me Nelson Coy got more parcels than any other x James

1/23/1916 (Sunday) - Decent morning x Church parade (was on duty) x Went to Infantry lines in afternoon & saw Nelson chaps, including Warnock x Y.M.C.A. at night; song service; very decent x Lighting very vivid at night x Additional man-o-war in canal x Naval men ashore with "Cornwallis" on cap x Man found drowned in irrigation canal; one of the Canterbury Infantry (Allander) x Got Summary & Colonist from Harry Finney; quite a godsend to get the news; lay in the sun & had a jolly good read x

1/24/1916 Put in charge fatigue party to carry dirty stinking mud bricks to put round a riding school x Cold day; have on leather waistcoat & also cardigan & needed needed them too x Troops & equipment still arriving x Received two "Mails" & "Preso" from Mother x Early to bed (7.45) x Tea & dry biscuits served out for tea x No butter yet; nearly forgot the taste of it x

1/25/1916 Worst day so far experienced x Gale during night, with heavy showers x During forenoon heavy sandstorm; then a little sunshine, more o sand & rain, Bitterly cold; had no idea could be so cold in Egypt x Troops still arriving; crowd of Australians came in open trucks during heavy cold shower x Spent practically all day in tent as was orderly bomb. Picked up overseas Daily Mail of Jan 1 & found it very interesting; also read part of a "London" x Pay day; Got 68 pt (14/-); drawing only bob a day now so will have to economise x Tucker still nothing too good x Have asked several more Peninsula what is general opinion of Godley; all the same; no good x No flying machines out last two days x Beer at canteen lasted only 1/2 hour! Few days ago while mixing feed dust got into watch, & stopped it x Day or two later while in shower, dropped it on cement floor & started it again, & been going well ever since x

- 1/26/1916 Fooled about all morning with rake in my hand x Right section half- holiday: went to Ismailia x Down to wharf & saw HMS. M23 come along side x The monitor is a squat-looking solid vessel, lying low in water, & not at all spick & span as is usually the case in warships x One funnel also squat; one short mast x In bow huge 14 in gun, looking quite out of proportion to rest of ship x Two machine guns on bridge; & smaller gun in stern x Portions of vessel protected with sand bags x Quite young looking officer in charge x A pinnace came in with two French ladies & some gentlemen x (a couple of dead fowls were hanging on the monitor x Walked round the shipping portion of the lake; four big warships; one French by it's fighting tops x bow lines x Saw sailors with "Cornwallis" & "Implacable" on caps x Went through several streets, trees both sides & overhanging each other x Passed several tennis courts; French girls playing in one x Seemed to get quite annoyed when made bad shot x Further along football match Main Body Engineers v. Reinforcements x Some good play x Fancy I passed Sergt Dean on a bike x Gardens very pretty; scarlet & heliotrope (sic) & mauve
- 1/27/1916 Fooled about x Cold showers and thunders storms x In charge picquet at night - wet one x Letter from Aubrey x



1/28/1916 change fatigue parties; dug cess pit x About noon mounted brigade N.Z. commenced to arrive; two or three thousand of them x From Zeitoun x In evening went over to 10th Intd lines saw Barry (Stoke); McCabe gone back N.Z. Walker still in England x Missed Frank Taylor x Saw Perkins (ambulance) on way over x also Edmonds: walked back with Symons (Takaka) x Letter from Sister ----- (sic)

1/29/1916 wrote mother, also several p.c's x Beautiful day; aeroplanes very active; rumour one been missing several days x Movement of warships in canal x Mounted men moved off further down canal x Troops still arriving x Fooled about x

1/30/1916 (Sunday) Church parade morning: only 40 mins to get breakfast; shave & dress for parade x Lovely day; troops arriving & going x Letters from Mother Ray Nell & B.C. (Hobart) x Wrote to Ray x Row in Ismailia this afternoon x Military police came on scene & one of them (an Australian) struck an Australian just over temple with a waddy & he was dead in about 10 mins x A chap who witnessed the incident told me x Mob made other policemen; think he got away x Poor look out for him if caught x Indians were also mixed up in it & one got knocked about x In evening went with Toby A. to hear Rev Taylor in Ambulance lines x Service in shed, two or three lighted candles, & chaps sitting down on sand x Very informal; sang several hymns then padre told chaps to "light up their pipes & we will have a yarn" x Spoke about sin x so he was not an ecclesiastical tyrant x & took broad view of matter x

1/31/1916 another fine day x Fooled about; ride in afternoon x Went over to Field Ambulance in evening & saw Harris (Milton St) x Every preparation for scrap; big marquees, stretchers, beds & mattresses x Received cigarettes & tobacco per overseas club from Mr Perrett, Hill Hawera; wrote & thanked him x

2/1/1916 Anniversary Nelson x spent last on Tahuna Sands x Today lovely day x Field manoeuvres morning; fatigue afternoon x Letters from Nurse Ingram & Uncle Geo x In charge picquet night x

2/2/1916 Field manoeuvres x In evening went to see Sergt Allan & had long yarn x Fine day x Australian troops arriving from Tel el Kebir

2/3/1916 Field manoeuvres x Weather getting warmer & days drawing out x Got "Daily Mail" Uncle Geo x Jolly glad to get it x also "Dominion" from Rachel; ditto x In evening Bill Lucre bought over Noelly Jacobs (5th Battery) to see me, we went & hunted up Andy Hughes (Divisional Signalling Coy) Had long yarn x Horses stampeded at water; no one seriously hurt x Big lot troops arrived x

2/4/1916 Exercising horses morning; nothing doing afternoon x Went & saw Dr Pearlless in evening; got rather thin x Hopes to go N.Z. for a trip, but coming back again x Two "mails" from Mother x Train loads troops & equipment arriving all day x

2/5/1916 Early morning exercise; harness cleaning, & tent striking; afternoon went to Ismailia; tried every shop to buy brandy balls: have felt craving for sweets x Couldn't get any, but got bottle pastils for 5 piastres x Met Dicky Talbot & another Nelson chap - came with Sevenths x Been guarding Turkish prisoners at Mahdi camp x Prisoners well looked after; get 4 blankets; we get only 3 x Other day they had "hunger strike"; said cabbage no good x Rain soon after 5, & continued x In town saw sailors wearing caps "HMS Sir Thomas Picton" & Requien (French) x Posted letters to Mother, Holly & ---- (sic) x Saw mirage desert - just like a lake x

2/6/1916 (Sunday) Beautiful day x Column orderly x Church parade morning; sermon from Psalm "The fool hath said in his heart", Lasted 10 mins x Singing much better then previous parades x Had cold bath; stripped in open & had two buckets water x Owing to shortage of water shower baths not to be used x Big trains still arriving x Can now see warships in old position on Lake x Wrote to Holly x Sniffed stuff for spinal meningitis x

2/7/1916 Exercising horses; harness cleaning x YMCA evening x Australians little tight took charge of concert & sang several songs; good voices x More spinal sniffing x

2/8/1916 Field manoeuvres morning; bathing parade Lake Tismah  
afternoon x Slimy mud near shore x Couple chaps got out of  
depth & pulled out x Three warships in sight - one of four-  
funnels x Date palms round part lake x Saw dead fish like  
herring x Had fun with niggers selling oranges x Stopped in  
tent night x Made billy cocoa; took long time to boil x Pay  
day (15/-) Letter from Nell x

2/9/1916 Change weather; showery, windy x Oiling exercise morning;  
½ - holiday afternoon x Ismailia; struck shop run by French  
boy scouts; spoke English fairly well x Bought oranges & a  
book - French-English-Arabic x Watched tennis; went to  
wharf; Monitor 23 there; 9.2 inch gun (not 14) also 2 (not 1)  
in bow; No 15 in & Lake; also French [text - possibly  
shorthand] ship & 2 English; also big tramp x Saw 3  
pontoons captured in first attack on canal; plenty bullet  
marks; bits been taken off as mementoes; too tough for me x  
Letter from Eccus enclosing £1; very decent x also p.c. from  
Jean Ingram telling me leaving in Tahiti x Watched Indian  
Mountain Battery at Drill x Very smart at loading horses x

2/10/1916 out with guns in morning; hooking in & unhooking x  
Afternoon standing gun drill; branding horses Evening saw  
Jack Emerson x Good day x Also saw Noelly Jacobs  
(suffering "recovery") x

- 2/11/1916 Exercising horses; lecture by Dr afternoon x Saw Jack Emerson & McKee in evening x Letters from Hall (July 19) Mother (2) Effie & Ray; also papers from Kit & Aubrey x Big mail; mine did not come out until last & thought I was going to miss x
- 2/12/1916 Early morning exercise; harness cleaning x Letter from Miss Thorntons, Kit & Pickles x Football tournamt commenced; B.A.C. beat 5th Battery x Fine day x Eggs for supper x Wrote to Mother: also p'c's x
- 2/13/1916 (Sunday) Early morning exercise; Church parade;  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday; Ismailia x Saw native ironing, using his foot x Sailor from warship buried; found in canal x 1/c picquet night x Saw big 4 master going thro' canal to Port Said x Wrote Howie x

2/14/1916 Exercise & driving; bathing Lake Tismah afternoon; good x  
General Birdwood passed along, & as we stood to attention he  
gave us genial smile & said "Hullo; boys! been in?" Can  
understand after this incident why he is so popular with men  
x More fun with orange seller x "Ugh ugh ugh, I have lost 60  
piastres oranges," Australians no damn good" Maori concert  
evening, Dr Brick splendid chairman; told yarns & explained  
meaning of action songs & Maori customs x Big crowd. Fine  
moonlight night x Crowd Indians passing through from Pt  
Said way x Had yarn with some x Been to France; Some  
speak good English x "Fight, fight fight 18 months now" said  
a big Sgt-Major x One little chap all smiles & said "Sir" every  
time x One offered me a piece of native cake; very surprised  
"No" when I refused x Saw a dirigible

2/15/1916 Rained steadily until evening x Mounted orderly morning;  
supplying ammunitions afternoon little semaphore & lecture  
Lt Reed x stayed in tent all night; not feeling too good x  
Heard distant booming of guns towards Suez all morning -  
two each time interval few seconds x Probably finding ranges  
x

2/16/1916 Riding school x Aching all over this morning & went to Dr x Told me to come back for some medicine 9.30; did so; not made up x Ditto 4 oclock; damn him x Washed head in hot water; also brush & comb x Tropical downpour 3pm; had to dig trench round tent; in doing so found decomposed carcass of dog; also unearthed plenty of manure in tent x Advised today to be careful what we eat as several cases typhoid; no wonder when we are camped over dung heaps x Sports & football matches; Artillery beat Maoris x Letters from Mother (Jan 9) Auntie & E.B. (Jan 14) also 2 "Mails" x Saw Allen & Deans & two or three others of Eccus' pals x Feeling all right tonight x

2/17/1916 Fine morning; fresh x Field manoeuvres; saw dirigible x Afternoon harness cleaning; cleared out our tent of stable manure x

2/18/1916 Riding school morning; bathing parades afternoon; thousands in & out of water x Met Ned Collins in front canteen evening x

2/19/1916 General clean up in camp; afternoon went to cemetery Ismailia & saw grave of Ham & others who were killed in first scrap, also Lt Griffiths who was accidentally killed last Saturday; came over with the 8th x Fine moonlight night x

2/20/1916 (Sunday) Church parade, wrote to Mother & Effie x Attended service Rev Taylor in Marquee - Ch. of E. service x Football match in afternoon x



- 2/21/1916 Field manoeuvres morning; bathing parade afternoon x Ammunition coming into camp. [-----] Uncle Geo x ack. by p.c.
- 2/22/1916 Harness cleaning morning, § transporting ammunition x Afternoon inoculation typhoid x Had to be done again because no record of our having been done before x Talking to Indian troops on way to Suez x They said "Australian § New Zealand plenty big men (raising their hands) § good; English so high; no good x Pay day; did not draw x
- 2/23/1916 Exercising horses; ½ holiday afternoon x Went to Ismailia; saw Frank Findlay in hospital; met Frank Taylor in town x 1/c picquet x Wrote Effie § Aunt K x
- 2/24/1916 started to shift tents x Battery of 60 - pdrs arrive from England (a "Tommy" one) x Had a yarn with one of them x
- 2/25/1916 Shifting tents all day x Saw a hydroplane over the canal § later it came over the camp x
- 2/26/1916 Transferred to 11th Battery x Fatigue work morning; holiday afternoon x Letter from Eccus x Saw aeroplane looping loop; very high up x Met Tom Hunt x Not feeling too good x Papers (2) Uncle Geo § Eccus
- 2/27/1916 (Sunday) fatigue work part morning x Stayed in tent nearly all day; not too good x Aeroplane came down outside aerodrome x Had close look at it x

- 2/28/1916 Fatigue work all day; still not too good x Dr says I have dyspepsia x
- 2/29/1916 morning sick parade Dr says I am bilious & says dose of oil best thing to give me x Reminded him I had the dose on Sunday x I had to remind him about the same thing yesterday x Told me to come again at 8.45 & be careful to eat only plainest food! (What a joke) x Have not had real meal since Saturday x Later in day Dr diagnosed my complaint as jaundice & will send me to Hospital if not better next morning x Promoted to A /corpl x Feeling darned rotten x E.D.
- 3/1/1916 admitted to N.Z. Auxiliary Hospital Moascar with jaundice x Feeling rotten x
- 3/2/1916 more rotten
- 3/3/1916 ditto
- 3/4/1916 Feeling better x "Tommy Cooker" arrived from Mother paper from Uncle Geo x Looked up Geo Garlick x
- 3/5/1916 (Sunday) able to get up x Went to church service in Chaplain Burridge's Marquee (5 present) Presbyterian x Sermon Psalm 73-16-17 x Evening Geo G. came & gave me interesting a/c of 1st Battn doings on Western (Egypt) frontier x Feeling much better x Wrote to Mother yesterday; & p.c. to Uncle G. today

- 3/6/1916 Lady Maxwell visited hospital asked me how I was getting on  
x Ginger hair; not looking very old, 35 or 40; rather artificial  
inspection x Smiled all the way up the ward x Geo. G. came  
in at night x Feeling pretty good x Lot of N.Z. infantry went  
to relieve Australians at Ferry Post, other side canal x
- 3/7/1916 Nothing doing x [-----] papers from Eccus; sent him a note x
- 3/8/1916 Nothing doing; more rumours going to France x Lot of  
birthdays this month in family x
- 3/9/1916 Nothing doing!
- 3/10/1916 Do do
- 3/11/1916 Left Hospital; was not going until 14, but lot of cases came  
in & we were ["---ied"] - 12 of us x Just beginning to get  
rowdy x very enjoyable rest; well looked after x Rejoined 11th  
Batty; & soon after arriving Joe Stewart came in; been  
attached to this battery, & in my tent x Glad to see him x Got  
papers from Kit & Harry Finney x Received backsheesh small  
tin barley lolly from N.Z. [-----] am

3/12/1916 (Sunday) - first gun drill since leaving Trentham x Half Holiday x Ismailia with Joe x Photograph taken in gardens with two French sailors x Visited about dozen Navy motor launches for submarine attacks x Built in America also armed there with 3 in gun in bow x Wooden vessel, watertight compartments; beautiful oil driven engines; crew of 8 - 2 officers & men; speed up to 23 knots; cost £8000 x Came out in transport x Saw Bernard Jeffries in town; asking after Eccus and Howie x Went to Hospital at night x Letter from Aubrey & Kit; expect more tomorrow x Church parade morning; Sermon Matt 7 - 7 x Singing no good x

3/13/1916 Hurrah; Letters at last! Received: Two from Mother; Rachel, Howie, Koi, Matia, Blanche Joyce U.G. B.C. (Hobart), & Harry Finney x

3/14/1916 Sent p.c's to all who wrote me yesterday x Battery No. changed to 13th Batty x N'C'O's class continued; driving drill & riding x

3/15/1916 Received gift tobacco from Misses J & R.C. Mac Gachen 281 River Avenue, Winnipeg Canada x Australian Infty moved off to France or England x

- 3/16/1916 From Egyptian Mail: of 125 samples of milk taken at Alexandria 123 were found adulterated x Read in same paper that in Cairo some milkmen were fined & also sentenced to 25 lashes for similar offence x Australian artillerymen left for France or England x Had first flutter on ("Crown & Anchor" 2 pt a time; Won 8 out of 11 x
- 3/17/1916 St Pats Day; anniversary Gerts marriage x Bathed at Lake x More Australians left at night x
- 3/18/1916 Letter from Uncle Geo x Posted letter Mother x Rotten windy day; shower about 4 oclock x Went down to Lake with Joe x an Indian soldier asks for cigarette; found he had a packet in his pocket; he did not get any from us ! x l/c horse line picquet x
- 3/19/1916 (Sunday) Heavy rain in night; Still windy but no dust x No church parade; [---] 3rd Brigade addressed by Brig- Genl Johnson who told us we were going to France (as far as he knew) in about a fortnight x Joe Stewart got German measles & sent to N.Z. Auxiliary Hospital x Later in day the rest of us were isolated - for a week we were told x Bad luck, as we are going to have a shoot this week x Prince of Wales arrived in Ismailia; said to have been seen in camp last night x Esquilant Moula Geo, Bruce, Colin Cragie, Whitford & myself in tent x

3/20/1916 Making the best of it x Did not get up until 7 instead of 5,  
looked up drill books, read & generally whiled away the day x  
A battery did steel practice x Geo. Garlick came along x  
Heard rumour Australian troopship torpedoed near  
Alexandria x

3/21/1916 cleaned out my Kit & washed dirty clothes x Lazy day x

3/22/1916 Went out & watched gun practice far & distant x Very warm  
day x First time Discovered that my right eye is very blurred  
x

3/23/1916 Papers from Kit x Loafed

3/24/1916 Third brigade field day & firing x Clothes disinfected x Bit of  
a farce x Letters from Thornton's & E.B. Flies the limit x Top  
of tent absolutely black, like swarm bees x Met Brodie & heard  
that cousin Nev. is here x Weather terribly warm x Lucky  
charm & 5 [-----] from Thornton's x Wrote Harry Finney x

3/25/1916 Letters from Mother (Feb 6 & 13) Kit, Pickles, E.B. x Wrote to  
Mother Ray & Uncle Geo x P.C. to Eccus & all who I received  
letters from this mail x More letters later in day from Mother  
(Jan 30) Ray, Mrs Blair, Patty, & Daisy, & Aunty x In  
evening went over to see Neville Joyce, but he was away x

3/26/1916 (Sunday) not out of isolation yet x Wrote to Nell, Daisy &  
pc's to Aunty & Patty x Eccus Heard Rev. Taylor in evening  
x If rumour is true should be on way to France before next  
Sunday x Hope so x

3/27/1916 Nothing doing x Turned out to parade, altho' not yet released from isolation x

3/28/1916 order to release from isolation x Hottest day experienced so far x Lecture & bath in Lake afternoon x Lecture on embarkation etc x Cookhouse 12th Batty on fire evening x Our tent went to assistance & "Eske" got contents of pail water over him for his pains x Soon got out x Went to see Nev; not in x Saw Deans; showed me Eccus' letter x

3/29/1916 shifted tent to lines x Marched out to desert; footdrill; Prince of Wales passed x Bit of a Kid on pony x Another scorcher x Lecture 3 - 4; Item making gun [---] x Mineapolis (sic) as rumoured four day ago, torpedoed with Australians on board, so far as known steamer reached Malta x Very cloudy at night rain looks like x Papers from Eccus & Uncle Geo x

3/30/1916 Little rain early morning; but hot as ever by 8 oclock x Spent day at Lake; great time x Soon after nine black clouds; then thunder followed by dust storm x Came on in incredible short time, & Lake was quickly blotted out x Little rain fell; after which fine for rest day x Bathing & skylarking x Camp 4.30; found our tent blown down x Brought back chameleons, great fly - catchers; shoot out their long tongues & never miss x Lecture at night; map - reading x

3/31/1916 Routine; not much doing x

- 4/1/1916 Brigade day; mounted parade morning x Afternoon kit inspection (final) & inoculation for typhoid x Evening saw Nev. Joyce & had yarn x
- 4/2/1916 (Sunday) Church parade; service from St Paul 2C 12-13v Singing no good x Afternoon Ismailia with Craigie; changed 400 p.t. into French money x Evening heard Rev. Taylor with Joe & Toby; sermon good; ditto singing; Rev, [Caiote (?)] also present x Letter from Uncle Geo x We are supposed to be leaving on Friday x Midday meal rotten x Wrote to Blanche x
- 4/3/1916 Something doing at last x Advance guard left for Alexandria x Footdrill morning, & rolling coats & blankets x Big ceremonial parade afternoon where New Zealanders to the number of about 20,000 (?) marched passed Sir Archibald Murray x Great sight; desert covered for miles in troops & horses x Murray had 30 of a staff & body guard, (Indians) including several ladies; also French officers x Never before seen such a mass of humanity x In charge picquet night x
- 4/4/1916 Holiday; spent on Lake x Grand time x Some thousands of 2nd Australian Light Horse rode by on way from Seraphim; splendid body of men & horses x Bought spring onions (2 pt dozen) nearly all done x Definite word leave on Thursday night for France in the Menominee (the boat that Hall was on) x Met Stallard on way home x



4/5/1916 Mobilization parade & general cleaning up of camp preparatory to moving off tomorrow x First lot of N.Z. left tonight x Saw N. Vercoe, J Emerson Widdowson & Les Hair (at canteen the last named) x Rather have bed at night x

4/6/1916 Struck camp 5.30; rest of morning cleaning up camp x Afternoon swim at Lake x Am writing this (5.45 pm) while waiting to march to station x Neck painful all day; fancy strained muscles yesterday with all my pack on x Throat also a bit sore x Very warm day x Left at 8.30 x Our mess room & canteens were set on fire by someone & made big flare x Made ourselves as comfortable as possible in open trucks x Commandeered bag hay which made good bed x Not a bit sorry to leave the sand behind us x

4/7/1916 Arrived Alexandria wharf shortly after 5 x Slept now &  
again; but what with many trains rushing by us; the cry of  
Egyptians etc at wayside stopping places, and the bump of  
the train as she started & being a bit crowded, sleep was; bit  
restless x Passed over magnificent looking iron bridge &  
stalled with cry of men "Pass word to engine driver man  
overboard" x Quite true x An artilleryman lad foolishly got  
down & walked in river & another chap went after him, but  
assistance not required x Lost no time in getting aboard x  
While lined up on board noticed a p.c. (Overseas tobacco) at  
my feet; address upwards, & on reading it was astonished to  
see it addressed to Uncle Jack, Ngatiama St. Nelson x Picked  
it up & will send to him x Next looked at ship & saw she was  
Menominee, one of Hall's old boats x Only had few forms &  
[stores] for our battery to get aboard after which time our own  
x Will not be too much room & few hundred horses on board  
will not improve smell x At 4 o'clock parade with  
lifebelts, film on lifeboat stations, & told must always wear  
belts after boat leaves wharf x Will soon be in danger zone  
now x Left wharf 5 pm & anchored in stream for night x

4/8/1916 slept on floor mess room; others on deck x Good sleep x Things a bit muddled x Butter rancid [l-- --] & jam good x Parade 6 am breakfast: bread; butter tea & bully beef stew x Left anchorage about 7 am, & have escort small warship x Harbour good & big with breakwater on each side; lighthouses at entrance; one breastwork runs right out from mainland, & at entrance harbour has small gun mounted x Passed a lot of prize sailing ships in harbour x Sultan's harem pointed out; big stone building x Neck pretty bad, fancy touch sunstroke; cold also x Fairly in Mediterranean water very deep blue x Several boats in sight during day; one troopship in addition to our own x Have two destroyers as convoy; they take a zig zag course & turn almost on our length x Glorious day, & the clean fresh sea air is pleasant change from Egyptian sand & niggers x Had several lectures, one on putting on gas helmets; also stations alarm x N.Z. mail being given out; papers from Kit quite a god-send, as had nothing to read x Hammocks issued x Dinner; roast beef, spuds, cabbage soup & rice with raisins x

4/9/1916 (Sunday) still 5 fine x Land on both sides early morning;  
on port side all day x Nine vessels in sight at one time x Our  
destroyers are rushing to 5 fro at a great rate; other ships zig-  
zag ing also x 13th unit for duty; on LD myself so missed  
all work, 5 spent time writing 5 reading x Bundle papers  
from Eccus; great "win" x In distance saw a small white  
island for all world like iceberg x Slept on table last night;  
found it confounded hard x The submarine guard instructed  
to keep sharp look out; if one came along ought to get a good  
haul if not nabbed by our escort x Light shower rain  
afternoon x Good roast beef for dinner; also fair plum duff x  
No padre on board so no service x

4/10/1916 Slept in hammock last night; slight improvement on  
previous nights x Very fine sunrise x Nine boats in sight in  
front of us first thing morning; Passed several during day  
going East x No sign of our escort all day x Expect to reach  
Malta tonight or tomorrow x Been nice day with  
Mediterranean very calm x Bundle papers from Miss [Green];  
jolly glad to get 'em; had read the others x Concert in  
afternoon; not half bad x

4/11/1916 Malta in sight about 7 am anchored until 10 - big boat (Castleagles) came out and told us to await further orders Half-hour later came out again and told us to go inside x Malta long low-lying island, & on near approach was just bustling with guns & forts x Went into naval harbour, the other one being the other side of town x Town built on hill and all buildings of stone & masonry x Some of buildings look like prisons, but are no doubt barracks x Booms in harbour & also entrance x Can see a street, a dazzling white one; others are very narrow, with tall buildings both sides x See several spires & understand some beautiful churches here x Town gives impression of one mass of concrete & stone x Harbour alive with craft of all descriptions x Steam launches, tugs, packet steamer, a destroyer (O2) two patrol boats, warships, a troopship with Tommies on way to Egypt (they have my sympathy) & numerous other vessels x Seem to be several other harbours within this one x One we are in is semi-circular, & runs on in narrow strip until I believe, it branches into other harbour x This narrow strip which on one side is edged with ships, is very lively, & gives the impression of

4/12/1916 Left Malta about 9.30 x About a dozen fishermen came on board & searched the ship for I was two escaped German prisoners; not found on board x Passed two other islands close to Malta x Signs of cultivation along slope of hills; saw another part of town as we went by this way x Gun boat following us later on; passed other steamers; more in sight x Yarn that cargo boat "subbed" 2 days ago tract we are taking; very comforting x Saw on leaving what I took to be a Antarfa Hospital x Boat drill, etc, during day x Fresh wind & sea afternoon but wind steady as rock x

4/13/1916 Only ship in sight all day was a sailing vessel in the early morning. Seemed to have passed Sardinia during the night x Very cold and windy x Lectures & physical drill x Passed island about 4pm x & more later on, with clusters of small white buildings x An officer told me that the island we are abreast of now (6.30) is a small one behind Sardinia x We will not see the last-named x Blood red sunset; very fine x Put three horses overboard today x Vessel pitching a little x Rumoured we reach Marseilles tomorrow evening x

4/14/1916 Roughest day so far experienced x Strong head wind & heavy sea x Boat behaved very well x The sea struck her a big bump, & enveloped the whole ship x Coast of France in sight about 4 - line of low-lying hills x Should have reached Marseilles at 6, but bad weather delayed & as we are not permitted to enter the harbour after dark we will have to wait until tomorrow More horses put overboard x The other night one was put over alive; it was in a dying condition, but all the same cruel act x One of the men refused to obey the vet officers orders to help x This is quite correct as I made inquiries & obtained first-hand information x

4/15/1916 Entered Marseilles soon after daylight x Beautiful morning,  
§ sun grand sight x Very hilly § rocky at entrance; which is  
all mined x Right at entrance is apparently a fort; also  
several lighthouses; one well out to sea x Hundreds of  
chimney stacks denote industrial centre; crowd of wharves §  
forest of masts x Big 4 funnelled Red Cross ship "France" at  
wharf; passed close by her x Trees on shore bursting into  
green; also green lawns; very pretty x Up at 4 making  
preparations to get off early x Busy all day disembarking x  
Scores of ships in harbour x Two of them near by § used as  
prisons for Germans x Saw dzns of them marching on to  
steamer after 5 o'clock x Mostly good sized § well fed chaps x  
Send 36 p.c. § letters to Mother; Kit; Uncle Jack x Read  
yesterday's edition "Daily Mail" (2d) x Have to get up one  
am tomorrow as advance party x Bought cakes, oranges,  
from women outside the gates x Docks are immense x Slept in  
huge shed x



4/16/1916 (3am; (Sunday) waiting on board train). First Sunday in France commence work soon after 1am loading baggage x Very cold; Pickles scarf & Miss Harris's mittens very handy x Just finished & had a wash. Boiled [---] & tried some of mothers [-----] Green fields, gardens, lovely meadows, olive plantations, look lovely, early morning sun x Reminds me of Nelson x Tile works x Women washing x Women as porters x Cherry trees in blossom; peaches just coming out x Miles & miles grape vines x Gardens very neat; great sight x Nearly every woman in mourning; most of them smile ready for us, but most look oh so sad x One shook her head as we went by & another old one wept x Girls mostly jolly; throwing kisses x Train very slow; going along very casual way: hundreds other trains passing x Snow on mountains; all stone houses; hardly any fences; large number trees planted x Stopped few minutes Lyons; great crowd below x Threw coins & buttons etc. great scrambles x Magnificent buildings & boulevards x Pulled up at 9 & made tea x & rations issued - the first since 11 am x [Avagnont] x had breakfast; orange, lunch x At [Valonice] another train with big crowd; cheering, etc x

4/17/1916 Good sleep on seat; 5 of us in 12 x 6 x Stopping at Dejohn  
 Dijon when awake at 5; had wash; shaved cold x cold misty  
 rain x Pulled up at Alesia for breakfast; bought bread &  
 gingerbread; tea rum in it; good feed x Scenery still lovely;  
 trees planted everywhere; along canal banks, dividing fences,  
 any little vacant plot; lane near railway stations, wonderful  
 [realt] x France looks like one big private garden with plenty  
 of workman to look after it x Women working everywhere x  
 Dinner at Montreau; bought glass coffee 2d; also cakes; gave  
 soldiers bully beef & biscuits; gave us some cider x Our  
 interpreter (Bomb. Piper who has been very useful) was told  
 that Germans attacking along whole line, & were being held x  
 Lot of soldiers about holding themselves ready x Soldiers  
 everywhere on guard x Changed at Juvisy (One most  
 important junctions in the world) for our destination x We  
 were 12 miles from Paris when we changed another direction  
 x Youngsters asking for bully beef x Versailles 6.45 x Red  
 cross women with coffee; just the thing; also gave us souvenir  
 P.C. x Got one of Napoleon; gave in return a badge x Cheering  
 as we left x Slept in clothes x Palace at Versailles x  
 4/18/1916 arrived Le Havre 6 am x Slept in clothes last night x Saw  
 Eiffel tower last evening x Cold wind & rain x Went ahead to  
 camp (about 5 miles out) with first load of baggage; & now  
 waiting for second lot x Went thro' town on way up: fine  
 buildings; dirty near docks x at camp got good feed in café  
 nearby x Read today's London "Daily Mail" before dinner x  
 all People going to work as we went through Havre x Street  
 dirty; all the workforce very clean looking; hair trimmed  
 neatly etc x Gave kids & girls biscuits & bully x Went bed  
 about 8; 12 in tent x

- 4/19/1916 Cold windy & showery x Letters from Aunt K, Kit, Twinnies, Boy, Mrs Thornton, EB, Miss [Gu---] Aunt Amy x More letters from Howie, Mother, Ray, Kit & Pickles x Jolly glad to get them all x
- 4/20/1916 still cold & windy x Went to remount depot & drew our horses; walk about 4 or 5 miles each way x In afternoon went to town for 2 hrs x Afternoon tea for four (with a return of cakes) 6 francs; bought p,c, 4d doz. x Gillette blades x Drew guns & wagons in afternoon x Letter from Effie, papers from Kit & Aunt Amy x
- 4/21/1916 (Good Friday) Lovely morning; but rain in afternoon x Busy getting ready to move off which we did about 4 pm in steady rain x Marched thro' town to station, & then entrained x Had tea & cakes bought at stall x Very tired & wet; now waiting for train to take off x Very weary x Got away about 9 x

4/22/1916 Had some sort of sleep; no blankets; great coat too wet x  
Raining hard in morning; going very slow, & stops  
numerous x Had an apology for a wash in a ditch; feel dirty,  
but must keep on smiling x Pulled up for breakfast about 10 -  
bread, butter jam cheese & tea x Rain then stopped x Writing  
this on train x Still passing thro' grand & pastoral country x  
At a siding passed lot of French soldiers; gave them  
cigarettes, bread & bully beef x seemed jolly glad to get it x  
Passed several Red Cross trains x Dinier ditto x Been lot  
rain; low lying lands flooded x Passed Australians &  
Canadian camps; looked very wet x Passed thro' Boulogne  
(where Bristol Ex Force camped) at 10 to 5 pm x Saw ships x  
Passed thro' Calais; canal & barges x Half cup tea at St Omer  
x Get off in 40 minutes x Commenced to detrain about 10 x  
Rain stopped x Steenbecque name station x

4/23/1916 (Easter Sunday) in billet, somewhere in France Les Ciseaux  
Moved off from the station after midnight x Very sloppy  
under-foot, & had to do most of our work in the dark x  
Commenced what proved to be a long march x Passed thro  
several quaint villages; long houses with high sloping roofs,  
& abutting right on river x Realised we were near to front  
from deep boom of guns & the flashing of powerful  
searchlight x Pulled up at a farmhouse just at dawn, when the  
blackbirds & thrushes were resting in Easter Sunday x Farm  
yard ankle deep in mud x Tethered, watered & feed horses x  
About 80 are sleeping in a barn at the farm while others  
(myself included) are similarly situated further down the  
road x Old fashioned places, thatched roof; stables & cowsheds  
are adjoining; & a big manure pile right at the door; same  
where I am x Had a piece of bully beef stew & hard biscuits;  
plenty of fowls & pigs to keep us in company x Church bells  
ringing early morning; sun shining [len---] x Very damp  
underfoot x Angele Hahaun

Julienne Charles

4/24/1916 Later in the morning "Eskie" & I went for a walk to the village  
(Sunny day) guns booming most of day x We are about 23  
miles from firing line x Had easy day x Went to a village in  
evening; food coffee 1  $\frac{3}{4}$  glass x Had look inside church; very  
pretty x Motor lorry stuck side road today x Got nasty cold x

4/25/1916 Saw fine aeroplane first thing morning, & later on the guns  
were booming out as hard as they could x several seem to go  
off together x Wrote mother x Village evening x

4/26/1916 Weather warm x Firing nearly all day; saw five aeroplanes x  
Went to village evening x Fine; very heavy bombardment  
from early morning; due down during day & intense yarn  
at evening x Wrote to Pickles & Twinnings x Went to village;  
(enquired Geo Garlick - in hospital x

4/27/1916 Rejoined Battery; gun drill all day x [---] warmer x Met  
Harold Black's brother x Wrote Eccus x

4/28/1916 Violent cannonading early morning x Fine & warm day x  
Saw five aeroplanes all together x Gun drill morning x  
Nearly all gunners went to Calais in afternoon for shooting  
practice x Rode to station with them & brought back their  
horses x Went thro' town Hazebruck (quite a big one) x  
Enjoyable ride, altho' only a blanket in lieu of saddle going -  
over four hours in saddle x Soldiers everywhere x Going thro'  
villages will see chalked up in houses "Otago M R orderly  
Room" etc, or 1st Battn - Post Office" Passed motor lorries,  
London buses, motor cycles & car x numerous transport,  
wagons Miles of road paved with stone squares More  
gun/sfire (sic) evening Food been poor since arriving - no  
butter, jam or bread x Tonight all three on issue x I/c horse  
line picquet x Big windmill saw on the way to station x  
Heard about Irish rebellion x

- 4/29/1916 Still fine; exercising horses morning; relieved orderly at orderly room x Cannonading as usual x Gunner in charge hotel picquet night x Wrote Aunt Amy x
- 4/30/1916 Sunday) Fine day; cannonading morning; wrote mother chaps returned from Calais x Church parade; attended portion of it; Battery orderly x
- 5/1/1916 fine day; very little firing heard x Not much doing in camp; Battery orderly x Saw Joe in evening; supper eggs & coffee; & wines
- 5/2/1916 Letters from Mother (March 5) Aunt R. & Ned x Violent thunder-storm followed by raw afternoon x Heavy fire midday x Route march morning x Letter & razor blades from Eccus x Send F.S. cards to Mother, Aunt & Fred & letter to Eccus x Head cold too for first time x Plenty of swallows x
- 5/3/1916 Fine but cloudy; cannonading evening: gun drill x Late at night very heavy cannonading x
- 5/4/1916 Papers from "Mail" Jubilee number x Route march all day; bathe in canal; very nice day; green fields etc x Farmers putting in spuds x Cannonading as usual x Letters from Aunt Amy & Uncle Geo x "Dominion from Effie (2) x struck farmhouse & had feed eggs, chipped potatoes bread & coffee (1/2d each) x Snow with me x

- 5/5/1916 Warm & sultry x Saw Taube aeroplane flying almost overhead; some saw shells bursting near it x Cannonading; Colonist summary from Harry Finney; jolly pleased to get it; passed it on to Nelson boys x Weekly Dispatch Uncle Geo x
- 5/6/1916 No cannonading x Showery; 13th beat 10th football 3 to nil x Went to village in evening x "Dispatch" from Uncle Geo
- 5/7/1916 (Sunday) Exercise morning; holiday afternoon; only little cannonading; saw Joe evening; eggs & coffee x No church parade x wrote mother; p.c's to Uncle Geo, Harry Finney, & Ken Lucas x
- 5/8/1916 Cold windy, showery x Route march fully equipped morning; gun drill afternoon x No firing x Saw Hamilton first time since leaving Egypt x
- 5/9/1916 Showery nearly all day; exercising horses morning; harness cleaning afternoon x A Little cannonading x NCO's & 2 officers went to Armentières; we follow later x Tucker very short at dinner x
- 5/10/1916 Fine. route march morning; cleaning guns afternoon x Saw & heard a parroquet, more like NZ, every day x No cannonading x "Dispatch" Uncle Geo x



- 5/11/1916 Route march all day; dinner on roadside x Meadows full of buttercups & daisies x Pretty forest where we dined x Heard no cannonading x Wrote Eccus & Uncle Geo x Joe & others from B.A.C, joined battery x Expect to move out on Saturday x Cloudy but fine day x Four men went England on leave x Sent letters to Eccus & Uncle Geo
- 5/12/1916 Still dull but fine; route march morning; routine afternoon x No cannonading; oak trees bursting into leaf x Three "Dispatches" x Geo; ack
- 5/13/1916 Very wet day; rough exercising horses early morning; rain nearly all time x Harness cleaning x Holiday afternoon x Place quagmire x Letters from Mother (March 12) Kit, Effie & Eccus (March 25) x Heavy cannonading last night for few mins; ditto early a.m. wrote mother x
- 5/14/1916 (Sunday) Dull & fine; spent day getting ready move off to firing line tomorrow x Papers from Mother, Kit & Effie x No cannonading x

5/15/1916 Left [Les Cesieu] for Vieuxberquin Reveille 3.30am; moved off full marching order soon after 6 x Rained for first 3 hours, & got a little wet x After going four hours pulled in a farm-yard & stayed there remainder day x Obtained some very nice butter farmhouse x Passed forests x Cannonading at night x Let chaps late early morning parade: picquet x Played with youngsters in the evening on the road x Short distance from here we passed church showing signs of bombardment; some of the chaps visited it in evening; Battery orderly, not able to go x Trents passed thro' on way to Armentieres x

5/16/1916 Lovely morning x Saw my first aerial duel x While at breakfast saw 3 aeroplanes high up; one shining almost pure white in sun x Soon saw it was being chased by other two x When almost overhead rat! rat! rat! rat! went the machine guns of the pursuers (allies) x & could see The German went on towards east hotly pursued x Soon the anti air craft guns got to work & bursts of white fleecy balls of smoke denoted the shrapnel x Could not see any result x x x x x After breakfast air-craft guns again busy; bursts occurring with great rapidity x at present, moment one of our machines is passing directly overhead of me; not high up x (9.15 am) x (Air x x x x x Duel: saw machines towards east; German high up; came towards us then circled to it's own lines; our machines; one behind other, catching up & good chase x German kept on its course & did not seem to deviate from its course) x About 6 pm: on road waiting to move off to the front (Armentieres) x Aeroplanes busy; heavy firing; two or three dirigibles; machine guns going off x Might be having a flutter ourselves tomorrow x Had tea alongside horses in farmyard while waiting to hook on x First Brigade Battery moved in as

5/17/1916 Reached Armentières about 12.30am; beautiful moonlight night x Big body of troops on road x Passed General Birdwood & staff on corner of road x Not allowed to smoke after dark x Starshells lighting up country; heaps of them x also cannonading also machine g[uns] durn x Got horses fixed up & bed about 2 x Billeted top storey old brewery x On Easter Sunday shell came thro stable (can see hole) & killed 8 horses x We are relieving a Tommy Battery x Our chaps took over guns today x I am not going up till next week x Very heavy firing this morning x Mostly at aeroplanes x Some high explosive shells seemed to go right over the top of us & explode with a shrill blast x Hear them coming something like cross-cut saw x Up at 5.30; watered horses x Had decent breakfast x are right in the city x Passed church badly damaged shell fire, said to be done by French when it was in occupation of Germans; all windows broken, roof & spire gone, & generally gutted appearance

5/18/1916 Reveille 5.30; watered horses river Lys alongside which we are; billeted in old brewery x very tired all day; parades as usual x We are relieving A Battery (English Territorials): taking over their guns & equipment x Guns already in pits x Last night Germans discovered positions of two of guns (right section) & knocked pits to bits, but no damage to guns x Our chaps took over at midday x Right section unable to get to position x I am going up next week with second relief x First thing morning lively firing; great number of shots at aeroplanes all day; shrapnel burst & leave little balls of white smoke, which hang in air for quite long time x While watering morning shells (Germans) were fired almost overhead & made deuce of a noise x just like a couple of long pieces of iron chained end to end would make tearing thro' air x One fell quite close but failed to burst x Said to be shelling 60 pdr position x In evening went to Armentieres; in a deuce of a mass of bombardment x Germans were in position for ten days in 1914 x Passing thro' main streets great holes in buildings; roofs shattered hardly a piece of glass unbroken; & front of buildings bespattered with

5/19/1916 Last night quick firers going nearly all night; with occasional gun fire x This morning working on telephone wire, when bombardment commenced; light explosives & shrapnel x Became very hot after time & we took shelter in buildings x Bits of shells falling round us, one within few yards of where I was x Several women took valuables & went for safety to vault in cemetery close by x Letters from Kit & Eccus, & EB & paper Uncle Geo (May 7) x One side of road we live in is in French territory & the other in Belgium x Bill Wood & myself had eggs & chips in Belgium this evening x Saw Joe S x Heard several N.Z. wounded in trenches x Third battery billets got I ----- I about shell fire x Expect we will get it any time now x Hear inhabitants about here are going to shift x The landlady here is a good old soul x Gives us coffee in morning x When I came thro' kitchen this morning she bid me bon jeure (sic) & asked me if I would have coffee x Rather; but when offered to pay for it she got quite indignant x This afternoon gave me more coffee x Jolly good it was too; she grinds it herself x Wrote Mother x

5/20/1916 our guns very brisk & during last night x Germans very quiet; sent along only three shells so far (6.30pm) today x Saw clouds of brick dust fly up after each shot x air craft busy all day, so there should be some "strafing" tonight x Fooled about with wires morning; sleep in afternoon x In our estaminet there is a pianolo; (sic) terrible noise it makes; some of the girls dance to it x Nice girls here x Talking to a Tommy today, & he was telling me how well the Germans get on to gun positions; reckons there are spies about x He was at Epres, & said he would not trust a Belgian; also considers they are very inhospitable x One of our right section guns moved to new position today & did a little sniping; will be firing tonight on road in German lines x While out for walk tonight spent shrapnel from anti-aircraft guns fell around me x I scooted! x Marie Laumers Blanche Lirian Octavie Baggeman Marie Verollemon x This evening a number of the chaps sat with these young ladies & listened to them singing; very jolly evening x

5/21/1916 (Sunday) x Working most of the day on telephone wire x Fair amount of strafing going on x Right section got one gun in action yesterday, & today making preparations for emplacements to be put in tonight x Sitting outside estaminet at present (evening); piano going strong x Lovely day x Lost my only shirt yesterday & am reduced to wearing my jersey x About 8 o'clock had to go out & help lay wire to chimney stack (observation post) in Houplie (?) Houplines x across two paddocks long wet grass, over canal (had to go along some distance over railway bridge & along bank canal to opposite bank x Threw wire across x Barbed wire entanglements in the way x Then along road over river Lys (along railway bridge) then across grass, bush & underscrub following river for some distance; over trenches well sand-bagged in front of big brick building & protecting river, across more [entanglements] & then to chimney stack in premises [previously] used I was told as chemical works x Had to pass sentries at two places x x railway bridge & pontoon bridge x Sgt "Esk" & myself came along eastern side of river & over pontoon bridge x Sentry at later told us bullet Letter Aunt Amy x Quiet day; very little firing x Removed B gun to cemetery x Saw in action for a few shots x Rain in afternoon x Fixing up wire x Wrote Howie x



5/23/1916 Bombardment during night x about 6pm five German aeroplanes came over our lines & anti aircraft guns after them x Shortly after very violent bombardment of one our battery positions, evidently picked up by scouts x Not far from us & shells came directly overhead x Shelling for best part hour at few secs interval x Saw big lump taken off corner of a building x (The anti aircraft guns move off as soon as they have fired) x Shells then fell closer & set fire to small sheds, which threw up big blaze x Then some shells fell close to us, & we were constantly ducking x Headquarters wires cut x Out on duty in telephone room at night - 8-10, 2-4am x While here a shell fell close & shake building like sharp earthquake shock x Our own guns & others got going, & there was great noise going for a time x Put on at telephone room - 2 hrs 4 Off Fleming [today] Hdgrs wounded by bombardments x

5/24/1916 Empire Day x Little firing this morning; but on whole quiet day x Wrote to Mrs Blair x On duty right section gun cemetery just room to crawl under two pieces rounded iron x

5/25/1916 Still on duty RTX x only a little strafing; RTX firing afternoon x Wrote Mrs Gunn; papers (2 bundles) from Kit x Raining in evening x

5/26/1916 Helped work guns on RTX then afternoon firing about 30 rounds at ante-aircraft battery x Very little fire from Germans x aeroplanes busy in evening x

5/27/1916 Great go with machine guns & anti-aircraft soon after 4 am; heaviest I have yet heard x Also some big gun fire x Went into Armentières afternoon x At 5.30 Third Brigade got busy & each gun fired 8 rounds x While at dinner three rounds whizz-bangers fell close to us, two or three bullets fell in yard x One man (Tommy [Engineer]) who was on road round corner opposite left section got two bullets in hip & came to our orderly room x A woman also got one in the hip x Germans gave place hot time from 6 to 8 evidently in retaliation for our smack x Shells (5.9) falling all round our left guns & billets x We evacuated and watched things little further up road x Place where I slept had shell on roof & took away big portion; orderly room roof knocked to blazes; several shells fell on road & made big holes; some fell very close to Lx gun positions x No casualties; hottest time had so far x In all about 140 rounds were fired x Many of our wires were broken, & linesmen going most of the night fixing up lines of communication x Wrote Mother x

5/28/1916 (Sunday) - Most of the inhabitants in the shelled area moved furniture first thing this morning, using barrows, hand-carts etc x Met one old lady wheeling heavy load & I relieved her of it x Ginger & Marie came along too (it was their Mother's furniture x Went about  $\pm \frac{1}{2}$  mile; old lady wanted to give me 9 f & beers; very glad she was of my help x Sent out for jug beer & would have me take some before I returned x Everyone seems to drink beer as a matter of course x Women wonderfully calm, & never seem to lose heart x Soon after firing ceased women folk back in estaminet & have pianolo going x Looking at damage this morning reminded one of visiting scene of a fire next day x All hands slept in empty house over road in Belgium x Sorry to leave estaminet, as things there very comfortable & people kind x Our guns did fair amount of firing; not much from Fritz so far (8.30pm) x aircraft & firing as per usual x

5/29/1916 Letter Uncle Geo; wrote to Uncle Les x Germans bombarding Houplines x Saw church steeple on fire; then two more shells plunked into it; big fall bricks; big hole in roof of church smoking for some time x Firing more or less both sides x Germans usually have about dozen "sausages" (observation balloons) in air x Cycled into Armentières: tried to find jeweller's shop without success x Drew 15 francs;  $\pm \frac{1}{2}$  franc deducted from each man's pay for damage done to farmer's machinery at Les Ciseaux; I protested & officer said it was legal x

5/30/1916 Rain last night & early morning; quiet day x Shifted gun position Lx & brought up another gun x Armentieres in afternoon with P. Hadley x Saw Marie & Ginger x Big supply ammunition brought up last night in anticipation German attack which failed to eventuate x Posted letter Uncle Geo & Aunt Amy x building on fire Houplines near church x

5/31/1916 Letter from Mother (Apl 9) x 13th did some firing x Fair amount offiring; no shells in our immediate vicinity x Wrote to Kit x Coming thro' cemetery off "Ghost Guard" at 4 this morning saw thrush on tree whistling a treat; reminded me of home x

- 6/1/1916 Some mutual shelling morning; about 4.30 intense bombardment Houplines; one continuous stream shells falling among houses; clouds of bricks & dirt x Watch from our window. 2am our O Pip Station (chimney stack) got a shell into it x Lt [Tulsa] & Cochrane in chimney above where it was hit; no one injured x Hottest bombardment yet seen x We also got in some "strafing" x For past week inhabitants about here have been removing furniture; it is rumoured that they have had the hint to clear out x Went into Armentières and had a hot bath; first for months x Feed eggs chips & coffee for dinner x Shortly after 7pm a captive balloon of ours (the only one in this section) broke adrift x Watched it all from billet x Few seconds later saw a parachute let go with man in cage x The balloon was rising steadily & looked like tipping over when from the envelope a second parachute let go x Two big umbrella shaped affairs in mid-air, & suspended below two black objects which we knew were men x As the parachutes left balloon black objects were thrown out x Thought at first must be someone; but no doubt it was they were bags containing maps information etc; which the men
- 6/2/1916 Rather a quiet day x We fired about 100 rounds in afternoon x Letter from Uncle Geo & Eccus x Eccus says going home Rotorua via Panama Canal; leaving 30th May x Wrote Mother & Kit, getting them posted in England x
- 6/3/1916 God Save the King! x Quiet day x 13th fired 12 rounds gun fire afternoon; replied to later by enemy x Parcel of Jamas & cake of soap from Mother; expecting active services card x

6/4/1916 (Sunday) Heard of British naval [reverse] off Denmark x  
Bad day for aerial observation x Very heavy bombardment  
down south of our position x Wrote EB x Light rain showers  
evening x

6/5/1916 Later news naval battle shows [Selway] got bad doing also x  
In afternoon Battery concentrated in enemy ammunition  
dump; Germans retaliated by bombing Houplines - very hot  
while it lasted x Changed shift to Rx x Cold & showery x Too  
much wind for aeroplanes x

6/6/1916 cold & showery until evening, when several of our planes  
came out x NZ. artillery did considerable shelling of  
enemy's position x Germans very quiet; sent along only a  
few rounds x Paper from Uncle Geo; wrote to him x Towards  
midnight terrific firing on our right; lasted considerable time  
x Australians, I believe, attacked enemy x

6/7/1916 hink brigade shelled Germans x Quietest day we have had  
from Fritz; fired only about 1/2 doz shells x Weather fine x  
Heard of death of Lord Kitchener x Papers from Nell; Rachel &  
Kit x

6/8/1916 about 8am Huns bombarded row of houses in front of trench warfare school x Made a big mess of them x The last shell of the series caused all the casualties about 20 - five killed, including two Maori; a French soldier home on leave from Verdun, civilians moving out with bedding, hat boxes etc; mostly women folk x Wrote to Thorntons! Box sent by Kit (16 Feb) arrived x had a good gorge in the gun pit x Bon x The juice of bottle raspberry jam had slowly come out and was evaporated by the paper wrapped in x Smelt "just like raspberry" & tasted good x Many thanks x Milk, sauce, raisins, almonds, chocolate (Koi o Matia) ginger x Good O!

6/9/1916 Hot bath Armentieres; cold showery & little hail x very quiet all day particularly so on part of enemy x 13th had a start in evening x Eight of our aeroplanes up in evening; guns very active; said our airmen were bombing trenches they were very venturesome, shells bursting all around them x

6/10/1916 Another rather quiet day x During last night very heavy firing on our left (South Africans) x Letters from Mother x (April 3) Billy Simpson, Cousin Blanche, & Miss Irwin x Heard of capture at Verdun of 42,000 Germans x Russians also taken 50,000 x Good! [---] it in x

6/11/1916 (Sunday) Cold & showery x very quiet day x Wrote Miss Irwin & Lou Pirani x Wrote Mother x

- 6/12/1916 weather ditto x Quiet on our front, particularly Fritz x On our left (S.A) intense bombardment developed during day, & still going on at night x All civilians in accordance with orders, are leaving this part; expect something doin' shortly x Paper from Uncle Geo x Howitzers rather busy x
- 6/13/1916 weather ditto x Huns very quiet; fired hardly a shot x Bombardment on right (Epres) lasted all thro' night until morning x Pay day, yesterday did not draw; now owe me £5-1-6 x Papers from Kit & Harry Finney x Getting in big quantity ammunition in preparation for a stunt x
- 6/14/1916 weather ditto x No aeroplanes up for several days x Enemy very quiet x We did some firing in afternoon x Most of people hereabouts have left & Estaminet closed x
- 6/15/1916 weather ditto x Guns more active on each side x Daylight saving introduced; I lost an hour's sleep over it, getting only 3 hours in here between 10 & 2 instead of four x Speaking to I- ---- ----I in canteen; reckon artillery shooting of ours very good x Papers ("Dom" & "Press") from Kit



6/16/1916 Sun came out first time several days x Aeroplanes & sausages reappeared x In evening our brigade & several other batteries bombarded Germans x Must have been over 60 guns in action x Object was to allow our infantry to raid German trenches x Bombardment lasted 47 minutes, commencing with section fire 15 secs for 20 mins, night lines, 70 R; cor 158, 2750; 13T's & 27 HE; sweep 30', search 25 x Rear section fire 10 secs for 17 mins, stunt no 1; 30 25 L, 158, 2575; 51TS; section fire 20 secs for 5 mins - right lines, 70 R, 158 2750, sweep 5nn, search 25 2Ts, 6 LE; gun fire 5 secs for 1 min; night lines; 70 R, 158, 2750, 4TS, 9 Lc, sweep 30', search 25 x In all 142 rounds x Commence 11.15 pm; finished 1.10am x Terrible din; night lit up with flashes; rockets going off; machine gun & rifle fire x Object of "stunt" was to enable infantry to raid trenches in search of information x Official hdqu message stated "Raid successful; 6 Germans killed; no prisoners; our casualties 6 wounded x Captured quantity equipment & material x "The infantry had only 17 mins. to do their job, during which we bombarded curtain of fire behind enemy trenches to prevent

6/17/1916 Sunny day x Enemy threw a few shells over, one landing in the yard of our old billet x Knocked the fence to blazes through the kitchen; & generally messed things up x "Tired Tim" also got in to a 60 -pd battery x Was going to town & heard one coming close & ducked in a ditch; full of nettles! Pieces of shell fell near x Posted letter Mother & p.c to Harry Finney x

6/18/1916 (Sunday) Anniversary Battle Waterloo fought not so many  
hundreds of miles from here x Rather quiet day; a little  
mutual shelling x Wrote to Cousin Annie x Weather turned  
dull & cold again x

6/19/1916 very quiet day x Went over to O PIP x Dull day x During  
night another hot "strafe" from our artillery lasting quarter  
of an hour x Letter from Aunt Amy, also two shirts x Wrote  
Aunt Amy x

6/20/1916 (up chimney) all right over here x Not able to see much;  
misty; a village on left is a heap of ruins - absolutely x Big  
area flat land in front in front; clumps of trees; further on  
Church spire & chimneys; probably Lille x See over own  
trenches just below x Read in yesterday's Daily Mail that  
Nev Joyce has died of wounds x Greatly [shocked] x Met Ned  
Chapman coming from Trenches x showery x

6/21/1916 Enemy very quiet; our artillery fairly active x Went to trenches morning & spent about 3 hrs there x Miles & miles & just a maze of trenches, with dug-outs [cut] in at sides x Just room for one to walk abreast; wooden flooring x Men sleeping everywhere x Gloucester Avenue; Petrograd Av, "The [Donuts] Retreat", "Whiz-bang corner" x Looked thro' periscope x A kind infantry just taken over x Thro' what was once an orchard; some of branches literally bare; others barked & scarred x Also saw big trees cut clean in two by shells x An officer told me that Cousin Nev. was wounded in his dug-out by whiz-bang x Went thro' Houplines x Some parts a veritable shamble result shell fire x Nearly every building shutters up; grass growing in side streets; like city of dead but for soldiers x Here & there a shop or two & perhaps private dwelling as people still living there x Several churches totally destroyed x One church been very handsome one, just front wall & part was of other stands; top clean gone x Two rows of stately pillars are length church x Tower gone; bell lying at entrance where fallen x On front wall bronze figure of Jesus with not a mark on x Huge shell hole within yard, & rest of wall pitted &

6/22/1916 Not much doing x A few shells fell near our billet; one went in our former billet (the estaminet) x Inquired from 2nd Brigade men re Neville, & found out for certain that he had been killed x Three chaps were passing thro O Pip, & I asked them if they knew Nev x "I am in his Coy" said one of them & this is his hat", showing me one he was carrying x He was taking it to Lt [Manson], Nev's chum x Poor old Nev; I can't believe he has gone x Wrote to Kit x Beautiful day

6/23/1916 another beautiful morning; had cold bath x while up chimney this morning saw effect enemy bombardment x Trying to knock over church steeple just below me x Several fell short & long but their range to [ninety] & the poor old steeple had bad time; as chunk after chunk was torn away by haveE x After every shell could hear bits of brick etc dropping all around; whistling thro' trees, hitting chimney, or tiles of roofs x At least one shell hit steeple & set the clock chime going x one-two-three- up to 24 if struck in such sweet soft tones; one stroke for every hour of the day x It was on its own death knell; for a second later a shell took steeple clean off from the tower & it just slid off & crashed down x How strange it seemed to hear the peal amid such surroundings - so peaceful was the sound x Whizbangs & heavier guns were used x Lot of shells fell near our billet one fair thro' our old estaminet x All our lines were cut, & we were out of communication from 10.30 until about 7 pm x In afternoon went to Gloster avenue where 2nd Brigade in subsidiary trenches to enquire about cousin Nev x He was sleeping in his dug-out when he was hit in the brain, & never became

6/24/1916 A year since I went into camp x Fair amount of firing x One of our planes brought down a German one in the Australian lines x Rain during night & morning x Letters from Mother (3) April 11;17;23) Aunt Kate (2) Rachel; Kit; Koi & Matia, Thorntons, Mrs White, E. Baker x Wrote Mother (before receipt of letters) x A spent bullet from air craft gun missed me by inches this afternoon; picked it up as a souvenir x Bit of a strafe both sides during night x

6/25/1916 (Sunday) - Nothing much doing until night when we strafed the enemy's trenches x Aeroplanes (ours) active towards evening x Number pellets landed near us x Saw our aeroplanes dropping smoke bombs x

6/26/1916 showery x Weekly Dispatch Uncle Geo x Left O Pip, & went to Lx x Fairly big strafe by us in night. slept thro' it all x In evening our aeroplanes got over three of Huns balloons; & set them on fire by dropping bombs x Great cheering from trenches x So far as we could see, Germans had no time to get down in parachutes x Our planes took advantage of clouds & suddenly swooped down on their prey x

6/27/1916 *Olga Desmons 79 Rue d'Erquinghem Armentières Nord*  
*This young lady served me with a handkerchief for Pickles & a cushion cover for Aunt Chally x very bright girl x weather showery x Quiet day x Heavy firing on right (Australian) during night x*

6/28/1916 showery x Quiet day; heavy bombardment on left flank during night x In orders Killed at least 29 Germans & took prisoners x Our casualties 1 killed 6 wounded; man who was killed was carrying back German bomb; which exploded, also wounding three x Artillery fire, said to be very good, no doubt also a/c for Huns x Good deal of talk re our advance shortly x Posted cushion cover & letter to Aunt Chally; handkerchief & letter to Pickles; p, cards to Kit, Thorntons & Miss White

6/29/1916 Fine; but cloudy & on cold side x Went to Pont de Nieppe cemetery where I was told cousin Nev. was buried x Misinformed, & he probably lies at Loos 8 or 10 miles away x Large number French, English & N. Zealand graves - all in long rows x Most graves covered in growing flowers; but at present the N, Z. ones are only new & no flowers yet set x Each grave plain wooden cross; with small metal plate giving name & particulars x Sad sight to see all the newly - made graves x Met Macintyre x Bought roll bread & butter had it with cup tea (1d) at tea rooms x Big strafe on left during last night x Letters from Mother (April 30, March 7) Aunty, Kit, Pickles Effie (2) Howie, E B, Uncle Geo x Read them at 2 am while on duty x

6/30/1916 Fine but still chilly & cloudy x 13th div little shooting during afternoon x In evening own aeroplanes very active, 24 being up; about 17 went right over German lines towards Lille; several makes of planes, including battle planes x Two or three Germans came over later, but kept well over their own lines x Just heard lot of cheering; don't know cause (8.30pm) x Paper from Uncle Geo x About 9 pm we commenced a big strafe - the biggest one so far x Dozens of guns firing x Soon after starting enemy threw shells in vicinity of RTX and gunners told to take cover x No 1 crew cleared out & were not seen again till all was over x Everyone had to come downstairs in our billet, & phone shifted to cellar x Lasted until about 11 x Magnificent spectacle seeing flash shells as exploding; whole time trenches could be seen, thick smoke rolling; [heavily] along x At 1 am, gunners again stood to, & another bombardment commenced x Very little sleep for anyone x Tremendous roar, star shells etc x

7/1/1916 Glorious sunny morning; the first for many days x Cloudy in afternoon x Enemy sent a few shells into Armentieres, & killed a couple of little girls x Rather quiet day x In evening about ten of our aeroplanes very active over enemy's line x Message from General headquarters that the Fourth Army & the French have reached the first part of their objective; must be a move on x

7/2/1916 (Sunday) another fine day; had cold bath in morning x Wrote Mother & Uncle Geo x Letters from Aubrey & Uncle Geo x Town in evening; saw Ken Saxon x Heavy strafe by Australians last night x Aeroplanes again very active over enemy lines x One of ours returned flying very low over our billets & was wobbling a little x Came down under control soon afterwards x Said to be a strafe tonight x Very quiet day x Heard later that the airman had been hit by high explosives & had arm nearly taken off; also face pricked about x Had arm amputated later on x

7/3/1916 Fine day x In forenoon the enemy, no doubt in retaliation for our strafing on the previous evening, heavily & viciously bombarded our position x Right x Had many shells directly in front but short x New "B" Gun position also very warm time, being smothered with bits of debris; no direct hits x railway line torn up & buildings demolished x While out in a paddock on my own laying a wire at about 1.45 Fritz suddenly opened heavy bombardment x Whistling all overhead x Some incendiary shells sent over and one hit building, which immediately covered with flames; Houplines & Armentières the bombardment was directed x The firing was on Australian sector, & soon the guns on both sides were making the night hideous x Fires were seen in Armentières, & the whole place was enveloped in smoke from guns x Flashes, explosions, crashes x one shell came along with a deep sort of groan, as if it needed some oil x Lasted till about mid-night x Biggest yet experienced x An awful grandeur about the whole thing x Shifted from L x & put on lines for a few days x Wrote U. G. Letter from Uncle Geo x



7/4/1916 wet day; very little firing by enemy at present intervals throughout day we put [salvos] into enemy batteries x Papers from Mother (2 lots) Kit (2) & Howie x Good news Artemís from British & French offensive] x

7/5/1916 Fine but dull x Very quiet on our section x Had spring onions & lettuce for supper x S. Africans bombardment during night x 13 fired few rounds during day x

7/6/1916 Wrote Uncle Geo x During morning Fritz got on to LK & Howitzer; put one howitzer temporarily out of action x One shell landed within a couple yards C gun & filled in dug-out x Shells also fell few yards in front; & all round x Cemetery big mess x Tombstones ruined, vaults opened up & coffins showing x One landed just in a ditch alongside hedge & cut the latter lean off in straight line for some 10 yards x Paths littered with bits of trees clods of earth, pieces of masonry, bits of wreathes etc x In front of Howitzer line of shells fell about 20 yds short in direct line x Barbed wire entanglements cut pieces x In afternoon General Johnson had a look round x showery in evening x

7/7/1916 Showery morning x Went up to trenches to mend wire; which a working party had cut x Rained most of time x Made myself a stretcher x Saw aeroplanes over in evening x Rather quiet day x Good news continues from Western & Eastern fronts x Last night C gun moved to new pit alongside billet x Beautiful sunset x

7/8/1916 Fine day with spells of sun x Went to town morning x Commandeered green peas & new spuds for feed tomorrow x Big wire - cutting stunt this evening x Aeroplanes active x The ammunition in pit at L x was damaged; some of the casts forced over shell & otherwise damaged by force of concussion x

7/9/1916 (Sunday) Great joy in camp today: bonson parcel from Cousin Annie, cake brandy bath chocolate; if I don't get a "tummy ache" will not be my fault x Lovely day x German airmen very active; several came right across our lines; look very graceful white against deep blue sky x Fair amount of shelling mostly by Fritz x Went to wagon lines to fix up some wire x Had new spuds & green peas for dinner x What O! also had cold bath x Heard particulars from an infantryman re the deserter from Hawkes Bay section of Wellington Inftry x Remari Nimot by name, had been malingering for some time x On day he crossed to German lines he made excuse to go along a sap to a listening post and then scaled to enemy trenches x Left his coat and equipment behind x The joke of the incident is that he got 2 days CB from Germans for not bringing his rifle also the Germans put up a placard asking that his equipment be sent over x Wrote Mother and Annie x

7/10/1916 We gave 'em a few 100 rounds last night x The Maoris were expected to make a stand; but I'm told it did not come off x This morning, among other targets, the Huns shelled the church at La Bizet, on our left x One shell carried away the already damaged roof; another one of the two remaining minarets x Great clouds of brick dust x Tis said the church used by the R.E. as their general headquarters x Good cellar underneath x Beautiful day x Crossed over to L x for Duty - 8 - 10 shift x Good deal of mutual firing during day x "Dispatch" from Uncle Geo x

7/11/1916 Big strafe during night x Maoris said to have made raid & found Huns waiting for them in No Man's Land x No particulars x Heard the Huns raided N. Zealanders other evening & that when we were hard pressed Nelson Coy came to assistance, & saved situation x In today's paper stated the Anzac raid killed 80 Germans x During afternoon B Gun set alight to building in [Nelsonham] x Dull day; no good for aero reconnaissance x Heard on Tuesday that F. Marshall & Shelly (8th Rfts) been killed x

7/12/1916 Artillery activity last night x Today Germans shelled Armentières x We also shelled Venetès & also a 5.9 battery x Watched from billet x howitzer shells dropping on trenches - great explosion of earth & smoke x Dull day; showers at night x Looked over old gun positions, near RTx, buildings in ruins x Shell holes about 40ft circumference, 10 ft dmtr & 4ft 6 in deep x Dozens of 'em x When enemy reckon they have a target they pour shells into it "thick & heavy" x Spring onions & lettuce (collard) for tea x

7/13/1916 Sky overcast; light showers x Heavy strafing of Fritz during last night x We are supposed to have sent over gas & sent 'em along a few rounds in addition x very little shelling during day Letters! Hurrah x Mother (May 14, 19, Rachel (2) Mrs Angus, Harry Finney, "Ko Girls" Lou Pirani, Daisy, E B x I-- I also writing pad from Mother x

7/14/1916 Heavy firing from 3rd Bgde, 10.15 to midnight x Huns retaliated & dropped shells not far off us x The 4th Howitzer took some of their guns into the open & fired x A German shrapnel burst near & killed Capt Turner & another; also some wounded x Had seen the Capt just a few hours before x An A.S.C. man who had come to "have a look" got arm ripped with shrapnel x Rain in night; afternoon fitful sunshine x No 3 gun went out of action last light; broken springs x Dug out about 20 yds behind D pit a German 5.9 shell sent over the other morning x Quite a big one; shrapnel & had struck earth base first in ground about 1 1/2 ft x Will try & get it sent home! To Nelson Museum; as I understand this can be done x Dull day but fine x Letters from Uncle Geo & Annie; also photo of Annie's family - a bonny looking one x Sent a P.C. to Harry Finney; Lou Pirani, Mrs Angus, Thorntons Daisy letter to E.B. & a.s.c. to Uncle Geo & Annie Lou Pirani Also papers from Harry Finney, Mother & Kit x

7/15/1916 "Stunt' while ranging; No 4 stand by x (3100 165.55L original line) x 3° 36 MRT cor 164, 30'MRL Le, drop 50; 5L repeat; add '25 repeat; 5 add 10; (data); add 500 30-L, 166, .45'L add 100.10MRL, repeat; range 3900 repeat; 1° L repeat 16, 1 round Le repeat; 10' MRT, add 100 repeat; (data) 166.50L, M4000 ---) 166); 16MRT add 100; repeat; cor 166, repeat; 5' find LE repeat; add 100, repeat; 10'L, repeat drop 25; repeat; cor 166, repeat (misfire); repeat; find Le repeat x Data 166.55L; 4175, 166 x Fine day; went into Armentières in afternoon x Heard the Canterbury & Otago boys got smacked up the other night x Expect only a rumour, as we are constantly hearing such yarns which are nearly always disproved x Following message posted up in mess room; "the C Ra wishes to thank all ranks for their excellent work during the last fortnight" x Following message also been received from O/C 3rd NZ RB: in reference to raid last night: "Raid successful; wire well cut; carriage drives thro' x Trenches obliterated; no dug-out left; only bits of Huns found x Did your work thoroughly x ten casualties; one killed, 2 wounded all other ranks x Congratulations on (Sunday) Heavy strafing last night by us & also on left x No retaliation on our position x No enemy shells sent over during day; but our trenches were shelled, & we retaliated in a few rounds x Nos 1 & 3 guns x Wire-cutting x No 2 still out of action & No 4 going to ordnance tonight x Showery during day x Had cold bath x Good news from the Somme; big capture enemy guns & prisoners x

7/17/1916 Short fierce strafe by the S. A. Artillery on our left at about 10 pm last night x Dull night, & flashes very vivid at threw lurid glare on sky x D gun out of action x Dull day; not much firing on either side x Went to O Pip; saw Jock Hunter on way & had yarn x Wrote Mother x "Dispatch" Uncle Geo x

7/18/1916 Comparatively quiet day x From chimney watched a German move along behind their trenches until he disappeared behind some trees x Old Infty Hdqu shelled x Dull day, but beautiful evening, when our aeroplanes became very active, two of them remaining over enemy lines for some time in spite of a hurricane of shells x Our airman always go up at the first approach of suitable atmospheric conditions, seldom see a Hun plane x A few shells fell alongside O Pip x Saw Jim [Buick] x Have heard from different sources the Otago boys got nasty smack - up other night x Chippies spuds & bacon for tea x Mosquitoes are the very devil x Wrote Kit & Billy Simpson x



7/19/1916 Dull but fine day x Clear evening, 6 our aeroplanes came out in force; great lot of shooting at them without apparent effect x At night there was a three hours 'strafe' of a [portion] of enemy trenches in Australian sector x N.Z. artillery combined x Observed effort from O Píp; just one long bank of smoke & flashes & dirt x Huns retaliated, & sent some shrapnel about O Píp & also over old Lx 'possy' in cemetery x Two of our guns "C & B" fired from open positions x

7/20/1916 Up chimney 4 am x Heavy mist lay over section; looked just as if one was looking down from at an ocean of clouds, tops of trees showed through here & there, like rugged bits of rock x Fog lifted later in day; dull until evening, when had an hour or two beautiful sunshine x our aeroplanes very active x (Note: I have noticed that our airmen take every opportunity of a favourable atmosphere to observe; didn't see any Germans busy) x Sky thick with bursting shells from anti aircraft, During afternoon a big shell hit an old out building about 70 yards from O Píp; another a minute later took half a house clean away; 100 yards from O Píp x Quiet day on our front x "Tummy" out of order x Fine day

7/21/1916 Fine day x Hon. J. [Carroll] & Andrew Fisher passed here during afternoon to & from the trenches x Did not see them x Enemy shelled "dump" on outskirts of Houplines to left of O. P. & later sent in heavies one to station of 2nd Batty x Not a blade of grass now to be seen within a radius of 100 yds of gun pits; nothing but up-turned [dirt]; no damage done to guns & men I understand x Pits somewhat knocked about x Big & small pieces from each - R.e. shells were thrown all around us - a distance of quite 400 or 500 yards x Only few shots fired by us x Pay day: drew 60 francs (£2 - 3) x Poppies about finished: plenty of daisies & cornflowers (pretty little white flowers) x Big patch of latter to be seen in No Man's Land x

7/22/1916 Measured shell - hole made other day near O Píp x Measured (roughly) 60 feet in circumference 12 ft in diameter & 10 to 12 ft deep x A big willow tree, around which I was unable to get both my arms, had been lifted bodily & the roots deposited 20 ft away, and the trunk was badly shattered x About an 8 inch shell was responsible for damage x Went to trenches in afternoon x Letter from Eccus posted at Capetown Fine day; feeling all right x Fine x Made enquiries from chaps Canty Battn re Jock Allen & Deans; both well; former at instruction school x Saw several Huns moving about from chimney x Had hot bath; Good O! Heavy bombardment at night to the South x

7/23/1916 (Sunday) - Very solid morning for us at O.P. About 8 Fritz commenced to send along 5.9', & for 2 hrs shelled the vicinity, most of them falling in the paddock, but some on the other side river x One struck fairly in the river; & sent up water to great height - splendid sight x Evidently shelling the old gun pits x We evacuated (temporarily) & took up strategic position in long brick building near pontoon bridge, where we watched the shelling with interest x Great shower of shell splinters after each shot x Got several souvenirs, many of them quite hot x Found a bit of driving band inside our doorway x Our windows were broken x Some 2 or 3 100 pds worth shells expended for nothing; only telephone wires cut x Geo Garlick rang me up from 'A' gun pit, & I went along and met him & had a yarn x Fine day x Wrote Mother

7/24/1916 Fine day x Hun very active all day with his artillery, putting shots in all directions, including several minenwerfers into Hobbs Farm x Short & fierce bombardment of [---] trenches on our left x Had a yarn to Harry Riley; also heard Brodie was in 4th Otagos & sent him a note x Heard that we were moving out in a few days on another front x Letter from Bobee Cooke & paper Uncle Geo x Left O.P. & went on duty at Central x Wrote Mother x Following is typical report of observers at O.P (23 July): "at 4.30 am two German soldiers were busy putting wire behind their second line in line with Hobbs Farm 10 - am; Enemy put four 7.7cm shells into Hobbs Farm x At 10.15 am observed six men in Sunken House, appeared to be carrying sand bags & at 12 (noon) observed motor car going along road by Sunken Farm x - From 1.40 to 2.10 pm enemy shelled Houplines with nine 5.9' shells - 7.16 pm; observed three men running along road in rear of Sunken Farm x - 7.40: Balloon went up in rear of church at Quesnoy (last 2 [pars] my own) x

7/25/1916 Quiet day x 13th did not fire shot. Heard that one ammunition dump of ours has been blown up with big quantities ammunition x Sent Uncle Geo a parcel of souvenirs & letter x Fine day x

7/26/1916 Fine day; letter from Annie; cake to follow x Bit of strafing on both sides x Went to Armentieres x Passing across field other day noticed beautifully marked horse-stinger; black body; with a band of brilliant sky blue just above tail, & similarly marked under head x

7/27/1916 About the quietest day so far; 13th fired only one shot; very few from Fritz x Infantry (NZ) . Said to moving out of trenches tonight; Tommies taking over x NZ mail in; expect letters tomorrow x Fine day; cloudy x Wrote Rachel; also B Cooke (Hobart) x

7/28/1916 Another quiet day x Aeroplanes active in evening; saw two lots of five & seven having a great time with the German gunners x Went to gas instruction in afternoon & walked thro' trench with gas x [Echlo] Professional where we went to x Met Wardrop; borrowed a cigarette; Letters from Mother (May 28, June 4) Kit (2) Twinnies (one each) Pickles (2); Aunt Kate, Aunt Amy. Hui & Harrison; O'Toole, & Billy Simpson. Nice summer's day x

7/29/1916 cake from Annie; box from Kit (March 26) & paper from Aunt Amy x Good O! Another rather quiet day x Sent Gert a cushion cover and a letter x A.S.C. to Kit, Twins, Pickles, Annie, Aunt Amy, Hui, Billy Simpson x Met Jock Hunter & Hargreaves in town x also Harry Williams x Big guns had a bit of a strafe during night x Nice summers day x Machine guns active night x In afternoon one of our airman flew very low over enemy trenches several times & drew hurricane of machine gun fire x Just as I stepped out of door of messroom today German aircraft gun bullet took off part of a tile on shed & fell a foot or two away; another second would have been in line with it x Picked up bullet x Second narrow squeak from shrapnel x Wrote Gert & sent her a cushion cover. Also letter to Harry Finney x Retired to Cellar for short period x

7/30/1916 (Sunday) - Glorious summer's day; the first real one so far x In morning sat in cemetery & enjoyed the sun x Quiet day; but artillery active between 9 -10 night, the Hun commencing retaliation x Two or three enemy aeroplanes came over our lines x Wrote to Harry Finney & Putty x Wrote mother. Papers from Mother & Kit (4 lots) x Had hot bath x Also good feed at tea with Kit's box of goodies as the central figure x

7/31/1916 Another glorious day. Very little firing x Great news from Russia; Lemberg fallen x 75,000 prisoners x Romania also joining allies x At this rate we'll be home for Christmas. Off Central on to lines x (Later: a "fake")

8/1/1916 No doubt about the good old summer time having arrived x Another quiet day x Filled a few sandbags & fooled about the cellar making it shell proof x

8/2/1916 Summer still "on" x Long day; very quiet x Aeroplanes (ours active in evening x Two or three scraps x Heard Hollyman (P.O. Nelson) was killed other evening when [Engineers] billets were shelled x Wrote Annie & Uncle Geo x

8/3/1916 Still fine x Huns commenced shelling in front of "B" gun pit & kept going until about 4pm x Got devil scare, was cutting some lettuce & spring onions when heard shell coming straight for me x No shelter & I felt bally helpless x Burst 200 or 300 yds in front, but shook me up x Transferred to C side Rocket guard at night x Wrote EB x

8/4/1916 Two years since we declared war; Fred's birthday; wrote to him x Change in weather coming x Very quiet day x In gun pit most of day x Wrote Fred x



8/5/1916 Very quiet day; "C" group fired 2 shots x Had great feed for dinner; Pork chops, new spuds & French beans; rounded off with Kitz chutney and one of "Kirks" plum puddings x It was bon x Wrote Kit x fine day x General Johnston visited pit x x Had a yarn with Jack Emerson x Pay day; did not draw x £6-8-6 due to me x Lazy day x Fine x

8/6/1916 (Sunday) - Fine day x Very quiet until evening when some sharp firing took place x In evening we observed seven or eight of our aeroplanes cruising about, when they made for the German lines & dropped some kind of bomb, apparently directly over the positions where the "sausages" go up x Remarkable & pretty effect; a big patch of white smoke; then broke out into lot of spiral columns & floated downwards - the effect was at first similar to a cave full of stalactites x The columns later took a zig zag course until ground was reached x Thro' the smoke we could see the bright flash of the descending bomb x The smoke hung in this formation for a long time; gradually changed to a dark purple, until faded away into a misty white, Aeroplanes high up & sight of bursting bombs one of prettiest ever seen x Fifth November fireworks "not in it" x Our bill—rs [airfld] came in for great deal of firing x During afternoon our planes forced the Hun balloons to descend; & a little while after two Huns made a trip to behind our line & made two of ours do likewise x The Huns stood a big amount firing in their journey x But our balloons soon went up again, whereas the Hun did not again

8/7/1916 Still fine x On aeroplane guard x At night while on rocket guard picked up enemy guns by flashes x Noted position for future shoot x Counted 12' planes manoeuvring over Hun lines in the evening x 38 today! x

8/8/1916 Armentières in morning; bought two handkerchiefs for Mother's birthday x Warm day x Very little firing x Two Hun planes come over our lines Letter from B Cooke x Paper Uncle Geo x Pickles [---] f.s.c to [Eccus]

8/9/1916 Quiet day; Little strafing in the evening; C gun fired 9 rounds x Fine x Aerial activity x Lazy day x Wrote B.C x Genl Johnston & C.A.O visited pit x

8/10/1916 Dull morning with few warm showers; fine remainder day x Registered two targets x Making shells in front gun pits x Went to Armentières evening to buy some red paint to paint screen x Fired 12 rounds Huns very quiet x We fired some big stuff over x

8/11/1916 On aeroplane guard x Fine day; full moon x Received word to move off in a day or two x Do not know where to x All sorts rumours - Somme; to the rear for field training, etc x Until we move out we are going to take things easy x Star shells at night very pretty x Shoot up silently and softly; red glow at first; then breaks into a quivering, palpitating blaze of silvery light, increasing in strength as nears ground x See them going up for miles from our observation post - the top story in our billet x Machine guns rat tat tat; First one; & will be answered by another x Some have hard dry cough sort of tone - others free & easy & pliable x We sent over some big stuff at night the shells going thru the air reverberated like loud thunder, increasing in noise one second then receding & again crashing out in an angry roar x We will for some things be sorry to leave here; as we have made ourselves very cozy; but we cannot expect to have such an easy time all the while x Wrote mother & sent two silk handkerchiefs for birthday x

8/12/1916 Letters from Mother (June 12-18) Kit, Twinnies, Pickles, Howie & the girls, cousin Blanche & E B x Definite now that we give over to the 51st Division by 18 & go to Blarínghem for some days & then entrain at Steenbecque (8) for a destination at present unknown to us (probably the Somme) x Had a stunt tonight; 'C' gun fired 86 rounds x Put names of Will; Twinnies & Pickles on different shells we fired x The raid made by the infantry was successful; captured 2 prisoners & a machine gun x Twenty-four of our own men took part & only one slightly wounded x Out after information & found out that the line was being held by 12th Division (Reserves) x The prisoners were men of 45 years or so x Fine morning before we commenced Huns shelled our trenches as if aware of our intention x Got into bed 2am x

8/13/1916 (Sunday) Nothin' doin' x Fine x Went in to city for an hour or so x Joe took photograph of three of us x Only little firing x

8/14/1916 the new artillery general who is taking over from us visited pits; also major who is taking over our battery x The 51st Division is in Armentières & are from the Somme x Change in weather to heavy showers x Sent notes to Uncle & Aunty, cousin Annie & E.B. Fired only two shots x A screen we fixed up to cover front of pit was blown to billy-oh when firing today x Our "heavies" retaliated this evening on Huns who were shelling Armentières x

8/15/1916 A few showers x Quiet day; fired 11 rounds x In evening Huns heavily shelled Armentières; & our big guns retaliated x A couple of the battery taking over from us came out to our pit & much delighted at our comfort x Geo Garlic rang me up from "A" pit & I went across & had a yarn & took him & his friend thro' the cemetery x The Col (Standish) was overheard in our pit to remark that over 3000 5.9 shells have been landed in our vicinity since we came here x Heard earlier there were a number of casualties in Armentières this evening x We are moving off from wagon lines on 18th

8/16/1916 I/c also guard x Met some of 57 Division (Scotties) Fine strong men; darned hard to understand their lingo x Guided Lt Thompson (relieving batty) to & from O Pip x Right x relieved during night & Left x. tomorrow x Several Argylls were killed in Armentières last evening x Very little firing x Met Jock Hunter x Letter from Uncle George x

8/17/1916 Showery x Guided officer to O Píp x Saw some of the Gordon Highlanders going to trenches x Grand specimens, bronze, big limbed & looked full of fight x Speaking to some of the Argylls x All up from the Somme x In 31st División nearly every Scottish Regt represented x Their losses have been on heavy side x The 13th Batty have fired about 10,000 shells since arriving x The L x evacuated about 10 pm, the incoming battery being highly delighted at the comfortable pits x Wagon lines at night where a "shivoo" was in progress when we arrived x Bagpipes etc x Strongly challenged by the Scotties on sentinel in contrast to N.Z. x

8/18/1916 Moved out 11.30 pm; went same way we came x Passed thro' Estaire x Two or three showers ; arrived Blarínghem (near old position) about midnight x No incident on trip, except a horse getting into ditch & hauling it out x Harvest in full swing; when we passed through 3 mos ago all crops green x Plenty of mounted troops [-----] 1. L H etc x Hop gardens x

8/19/1916 Heavy showers during day x In decent billet on top of plateau overlooking pretty stretch of rural scenery - corn in stook x We are about a mile or two from our former billets x Takes 1 1/2 hrs to water x Fine evening x Saw Jacobs, Jeffries, Hamilton & Rout x Walked about for an hour or two x No guns to disturb us x Quite a treat to see descent houses again; contrast to Armentières where all are wrecked about x Lights in farmhouse looked comfy x Harness cleaning in afternoon x

8/20/1916 (Sunday) Few showers x Walk as usual x [----outs] of chaps had to parade at 6 H clean button parade x Rot as chaps been just finished trek; other battens had afternoon off; but we had o'clean harness x Quite a lot of nice things said about the army in general & our O.C in particular walked round in evening x Heard church bells at Blaríngham x (sic)

8/21/1916 Fine day; country looking lovely x Made preparations for moving off early tomorrow morning x In evening while strolling, saw five of our aeroplanes going out; few mins later saw them returning x All at once while I was looking at them one seemed to collide with another & it toppled over & over & went out of sight among some trees x Rather sickening sight, x & quite upset me for a time x Five went out & four returned x Lovely evening x

8/22/1916 (5.20 am - Arques ) Waiting to entrain x Left camp 1.30 am (just arrived x Breakfast after getting horses & equipment loaded x Loaded all horses in 35 mins x Beautiful trip thro' heart of agricultural France x Harvest in full swing; golden corn, etc; plantations interspersed with fields; canals, trees x Primitive methods of cutting corn x Scythe blade with short handle used with one hand; other big hook on stick, used to keep cut corn in position; then thrown clear in neat sheafs x (sic) Saw "carting" on small section by barrow x Most of holdings I should fancy, are small ones, & farmers too poor to buy machinery x Saw number reapers & binders x Lot of country rolling downs x Tuckered on ham, & arrived at Pont Remy 2 pm having left Arques at 7.45 x Detrained; no platform x Had to run equipment down improvised platform x Hard work but finished by five x Tea & biscuits provided x Moved off & road ran through beautiful broad valley x valley pasture land mostly; & low lying hills under corn x Trees on both sides of road for several miles x We detrained of just past Abbeville, which is at mouth of Somme Got to camping around Fontaine soon after six, picketed horses & then tea x



8/23/1916 Fine day x Morning fixed up our bivvy made it more comfortable x Put up "Rag Time Villa" as nameplate x Went down to lagoon & had bath x Great number of trains pass, about 250 a day carrying coal war stores, etc, troops x One train load [com--] Algerians - French colonial soldiers; wore red fezs; not very dark-skinned x Put on as Battery orderly x Bought some bread x Village of \_\_\_\_\_ (sic) is a one-street rambling old show, with a picturesque church; very old by look of it; went inside; rather pretty x The spire is rather [-----] I & round x Holes, over which project further up little cowls \* x Lot of traffic in street x Letters from Mother (4 July) Kit, Pickles, Aunty, Putty & EB x Daily Mail Uncle Geo x

8/24/1916 Heavy shower during night; fine all day x Battery commenced training x Addressed by General Johnston, who impressed upon us the need of doing our best to get fit for what was before us x Wanted us not to drink or smoke to excess; he does both himself in moderation x Mentioned to the Australians at Somme had had 3000 casualties x Had swim in lake; list food which is bought yesterday x Sent a S.C. to Mother, Aunt Amy & Cousin Annie x Saw big French battleplane; one immense plane, a smaller one underneath & two reserves x

- 8/25/1916 Fine & warm x Bty went on with full training x Had bath x Papers from Kit x Wrote to Mother & that Twinnies x Village & church 1374
- 8/26/1916 Heavy showers during night [-----] morning x Continued training x Papers (3) from Effie x
- 8/27/1916 (Sunday) showers last night x Back on guns x Inspection of gas helmets n[ -- --- --] morning; afternoon section route march x went thro' two villages; picturesque scenery by the way x Watered at a lagoon reached thro' avenue of trees x Lilies just showing up on water x Heavy shower just before reaching camp x Village in evening; plenty of life x Maori hakas etc; natives & Tommies much amused x Pay day; drew 30 frs (£1-1-6) x Now due to me
- 8/28/1916 showery x Good day's work x Morning gun drill [forge setting] (laying etc) afternoon lecture by captain on gas precautions x Told us about Fosgien, (sic - phosgene) which no way of finding out if it is about, no smell, & its affect not apparent for two or three days; when those affected develop heart trouble x Giddiness, vomiting; feeling sick signs of the gas x [---] must do nothing to exert him x also told us about asphyxiating (?) (sic) & tear shells x Seems as if we will always be wearing our helmets x Afternoon passing of orders laying etc x I/c horse picquet x Letter Aunt Amy x Supposed to be moving off to the Somme tomorrow night or next day x

8/29/1916 Orders to move out at 11.30 x Dull but no rain x Had bath x Moved off 11.45, & for 2 1/2 hrs wer no rain; passing thro' avenues & corn fields x Pretty scenery x Going up Somme valley x At 2.30 heavy rain [portrayed] thunder & lightening for an hour, during which time we had halted owing to block in front x Made best bad position x All more or less wet x Bought some butter on way x Passed thro' fairly large town of Picquigny at 5.30, & camped at small village of [Trincourt] x Bought eggs for tea; walk thro' village x Slept in dug out; billet no bon x Village church 1730

8/30/1916 Moved off at 11.45 x Soon commenced to rain, & continued almost without ceasing until we reached Bonnay at 7 pm x First part of journey all land in crop; the valley narrowed into swamps & lagoons x Hard driving rain x Soon got wet x Miles & miles of roads with leafy avenues great deal of traffic x Red x Cars, etc x Passed tree struck by lightning previous day storm split from top to bottom x Latter part of journey over hilly country; crops out everywhere & look very sodden x During afternoon came within sound of guns, & there is now & has been since a continuous roar x Spirits quite high during journey, but would liked to have had Mast Tapley with us to see how he would have been happy under such "disadvantageous lines" x Reached billet 7 pm; billet duty; no tea until about 9 x We had some bread butter & jam which came in handy x Several small parcels distributed from Auckland Patriotic Society; I drew one pr socks, tin lollies, tin sardines & handkerchiefs x Socks just what I needed at night x Walked good part of way x will soon be in the thick of the fight x Rumania joined allies Passed thro Armiens x Bonnay name village x

8/31/1916 Beautiful sunny morning x Managed to dry wet things & make matters comfortable x This morning kept on pyjamas over wet pants & put on gift socks & cardigan jacket, & put paper in bottom of boots; very comfortable in the circs x Village small one; dirty x Tremendous quantity of traffic; lorries, motors etc x Bit off, not too good x Have come across some very filthy hovels in village; contrast to those seen in S. France x Heavy firing in night x We are about 14 k from Albert x Some 10 or 12 mile from firing lines x This evening went up with Joe to hills overlooking stretch of beautifully undulating country; all corn in stook; (sic) villages nestling among trees & canal winding in & out among trees x Scores of balloons (black blotches they looked x Aeroplanes thick sailing along; diving, spiralling, circling etc; anti-air-craft shells everywhere, balls of smoke, air absolutely thick with motion x Wonderful sight along road top of hill; scores of transport wagons, Red + Motors etc x Tommies told us that on the Somme front has quietened down very much lately x Sun set at back of us behind clump of trees, blood red - great sight x Church in village MVCCCLV x Moving off tonight

9/1/1916 Fine day; drill, harness cleaning, etc x Slept late on early morning parade; result dirty boots & buttons at 9 parade x Letters from Mother (July 9 -16) Kit, Twinnies, Daisy, Effie, Aubrey, & card Cora Mac x Papers from Kit, Aunt Amy & Harry Finney x Posted letter to Mother; cards to Mother & Aunt Amy x

9/2/1916 fine day; fire discipline, harness cleaning; etc x Evening went into Corbie; nice little town x Full of Allied troops x Supper at shop where couple nice girls, gave them button as souvenir x Visited Church (662); also passed convent (1406) x Had ride to town in lorrie (sic) x Gave in one blanket x Note to Cousin Annie

9/3/1916 (Sunday) Church Parade morning; first since arriving France; held in cornfield x Guns booming, aeroplanes buzzing, motor wagons going by x Hymns "For Ever" "With the Lord" "Lead Kindly Light" Fight the Good Fight x Singing no good x Short sermon x "What is Christianity?" Afternoon wrote to Thorntons x First Sunday afternoon off since arriving in France x Heavy showers in evening Heavy bombardment rest of forenoon (Heard later that the Allies attacked at dawn; over 2000 prisoners x Many wounded taken to Corbie

9/4/1916 Heavy rain morning x Parcels from Mother (writing pad & handkerchief, Kit (toothbrush, handkerchief (2) & Aubrey handkerchief & net, & letter Uncle Geo x Saw about dozen Hun prisoners pass thro' village short, ragged & tired looking, on small side x Went into Corbie evening & saw casualty clearing station with wounded just arrived; muddy boots & clothes lying on the stretchers on floor x Gave them what cigarettes I had x

9/5/1916 Rt x moved out this morning L x going tomorrow x Fine but dull x [Put--] to move off x walked up the hill with Joe in evening x Heard bombardment all day & still continuing 8.30 pm x Good news from Somme x Advance partying the battery we are relieving came in today x

9/6/1916 (on the Somme 7.45pm ) - Moved off from Bonnavy 7 am (reveille 5) Dull misty morning, indication rain x On road passed German prisoners road-making x Good physique & looked well fed x Passed thro Albert x On top of high tower of church or public building there had been full life figure of women in bronze x Been knocked over & the figure (which has hands clasped, over head) is now leaning over from tower as if in the attitude to dive x Town knocked about in parts x Got to wagon lines [Bexodel] about 11.30 & gunners went straight to gun pits about 6 miles, walked all the way over rough Passed Fricourt, Mametz etc road x Saw what where once villages quite demolished; bricks now used for road making x Trees bare of all leaves etc, just dead looking; many cut off short x On way up just one continual stream vehicles /-/  
Sometimes three rows - one each side & other middle x Motor cars, bicycles dashing in & out just shaving wheels & under horses heads etc. Troops everywhere in camp x Low big hills chalky formation; trenches everywhere, white ridges etc, destroyed villages, trees stripped all foliage shattered, stunted stumps, cut off branches x Our position in shallow valley

9/7/1916 This is Som(me)e place x Slept last night in a narrow trench; could not turn over; if bend knees stuck on cold damp clay x & heels also x Just had to flop down into it x Thought of the lines "Each in his narrow cell" etc x Guess if they were as narrow as mine they were not too comfy x Firing going on all day & night; scores & scores every minute, Watch Huns shelling wagons in Death's Valley; got some of them x Several wagon loads of ours came thro' it & while unloading Huns commenced harrying on us; all too long & shrapnel too short x Case of getting amuntn away before range found, & we worked under suppressed excitement x The shells on side of hill towards Montaban (sic) directed on road; thick black cloud dirt go up, from which the smoke of the explosion would separate in lighter cloud x Working in open most of day & did a good deal of ducking x Did not manage to get us x Most of shots over x Improved our sleeping quarters & should be safe as long as get no direct hit x Shells both ways going over all day x Saw good many groups scattering for shelter x Aeroplanes thick as flies around dead meat x Most of time were gazing upwards x Will be very lucky if we get out of



9/8/1916 When went on duty 3 am found cake x from Thornton's x papers from Aubrey (2) & Kit x Sampled cake; right up to standard x Harrying most of the day x Went thro' Delville x Delville Wood x Ber Followed course of trench x Amuntn; rifles with bayonets (rusty) clothing, stores, etc, scattered every- where x Several dead soldiers also seen , One hung up in barbed wire; another with two rings on his blackened fingers; gruesome sight x This part had been No Man's Land; not a square foot not shelled; hardly believe it possible to cover ground so thoroughly; big holes running into each other x Trees bare & shattered x Picked up haversack x Firing going on all day not quite so much from the Huns as yesterday x So far (6 pm) x Am going to wagon lines tonight for four days x ... Left gun 7, bit of firing going on from Huns, but we got out of valley without being shelled x Ride into camp on RFA wagons x Had remains of cake; Tommies said had nothing to eat since morning ; so I shared it with four of them x After getting off wagon lost our way & walked all over France looking for our W.L, being misdirected several times x At last met some of our own wagons & got to camp midnight

9/9/1916 B.O. fooled about x N.Z. Infty went onto trenches; thousands on the move, intense firing at night & heavy during day x Made comfy bivvy out of ammunition boxes x Sent F.S.C. to Mother x Had first decent wash since leaving Bonnavy x

9/10/1916 (Sunday) Work as usual x Firing continuing x Wrote Mother x Orderly cpl

9/11/1916 Firing slowed down; but still plenty doing x Slight showers x Few shells came near W.L. x Letter Ray (June 13) (White) Aunt Amy x

9/12/1916 Firing died down a good deal today x Fine x Letters from Uncle Geo (5th) & Cousin Annie (1st) x Altho' we have heard less firing today the flashes at night show up a dozen or so every second, but are too far away for the reports to be heard x The heavy bombardment lately led up to the attack & capture of Ginchy, in which the Irish Regts were conspicuous x The scene from the camp at the wagon lines is very pretty at night x We are on slope of a hill overlooking other low lying ones x Lights are everywhere to be seen, camp fires & lights from bivvies; (sic) also flash of guns x Sent Cousin Annie F.S.C.

9/13/1916 Did not hear much firing but plenty of flashes visible x Dull & showery x Saw Royal Fusiliers & the Kings Royal Rifles (camped along side of us march out on way to front x Orders for us to be ready to move off any moment[is] notice x The figure on cathedral at Albert is of the Virgin Mary holding a child; superstitious custom. that when the figure falls to the ground the war will end x May it soon fall! Pay day; drew 20 frs (14/4)

9/14/1916 Parcel (sweets & writing pad [---]) from Kit x All day been long processional to lines, troops etc x passing to front along all roads x Orders to move up wagon lines tonight, & we left at 8.45, reached new wagon lines near Mountabane (sic) at midnight at 3 up again (the gunners) to the guns, where we arrived at 5.15 x Sharp bombardment for about an hour in the evening x Guns firing all along the road on way up x Slept in open x "Pickles" scarf very handy, also balaclava x There is to be another big push tomorrow x

9/15/1916 Left new wagon lines at 4 & reached guns 5 am x Had few minutes sleep x Big stunt commenced at 6.30 am, when hundreds of guns opened terrific bombardment x We continued until 11.40, then we ran the gun out & are now waiting (12.30) to occupy new position about 2 miles further on where the Huns were driven out by our infantry this morning x Our artillery fire was carried out to programme x which no doubt shows that the advance is being pushed forward as expected x Not many Hun shells fell about gun pits, but one about 30 yds away killed 3 horses & wounded a man x Saw a Tommy wounded going back with a Hun hat on x Lot of men were patching roads while fixing guns on in readiness for advance; also water main is also being laid x Our aeroplanes very busy, Had a bit of bread, cheese & bully beef for breakfast x Wrote on some of the shells "are from Billy Simpson & family & one for Thornton Family x Good number Hun prisoners already sent down x Said we have taken 3rd line Hun trenches x N Z Infy are in the fighting x Lot firing still going on (Later: next day): The rest of our journey was the worst experience I have ever gone thro' x All

9/16/1916 Digging in all day x Shell fire from Huns very stiff x  
Stretcher bearers all over country looking for wounded x  
Rotten night all crowded together narrow trench x In  
morning just as I was going to get my breakfast had to go  
on gun, & we [Se--] up for about an hour & a half x We were  
supporting our inftry in attacking Hun trenches searching  
25 yds Infantry unsuccessful; but attack repeated in  
evening, result not so far known but my breakfast (piece  
fried bacon & bread alongside [--] & rather famished nice  
before x Exciting unloading ammunition in full view Hun  
balloons x Covered in our trench & made it shrapnel proof x No  
wash since 9th

9/17/1916 Little sleep x Letters from Mother (July 23 - 26) Kit, Willie x  
Twinnies; Pickles (2) Mrs Gunn (& photo home) Howie, Effie  
Rachel, Daisy, Aunt Kate & E.B. Read them while taking  
shelter in dug-out x Shells firing all round x Lovely getting  
such a pile & at such a time x Had shave & wash x

9/18/1916 Letters which should have reached me a month ago from Mother (June 23) Kit & Effie x Wet night, up several times assisting rain came in trench x Sort of "Hopeless Dawn" morning; tea, bacon & bread for breakfast eaten standing up x Read Effie's letter & she says she was sitting by Kitchen fire cooking roast loin etc, would I like some! Eh What! Stretcher bearers still busy ; on the day of the advance great sight to see our infantry moving up under shell fire at the usual rate of walk x Our caterpillar "ships" (two or three of them) are to be seen & are said to have been successful x Rain continued all day x We had to evacuate our trench & tried to make pit watertight x The cooks galley caved in at dinner time so we had bully & bread & butter x Tea ditto x at night we tried to make ourselves comfortable amid the mud & slush x Overcast wet thro' & most of us covered with mud x During night we managed to boil dixie & nearly suffocated with smoke x When the fire began to blaze we almost commenced to sing x Tea (with whisky) was A1 x

9/19/1916 what a night! My posy (sic) was on a bit of corrugated iron about 2 ft long, coat in mud x just off to sleep once or twice when Fritz shelled & we went to the trench for shelter x Cold & wet x In morning as we were all sitting looking at one another Parcels from Mother arrived: cigarettes & soap in one, cigarettes & chocolate in another; also parcel from Miss Thornton:: chocs & cigs just the thing; smoked my last yesterday x Chocs also very acceptable & went round x Pickles scarf & balaclava just the thing x Managed to cook breakfast, bacon & tea by 11am x Altho' we were very uncomfortable the thought of the infantry in the trenches without covering & overcoats made me thankful we were as well off as we were x Mud ankle deep in pit x Horses having bad time bringing up ammunition x Sun came out later & dried things up a little tho' still heaps of mud about x Air thick with firing in evening; from distance just like swarm bees x Several fights; could see no result x In reference to N.Z. Infy's part in attack one of our officers told us that he had just been speaking to a Guards officer who said that hitherto he had taken the Anzacs with a grain of salt; but

9/20/1916 Girts' Birthday x Huns very busy last night & only one ammunition wagon could get thro' on a/c of road being blocked x Rain x Slept in wet trench & had devil of a night x Cold as charity; turned out during night for SOS x As no rations came up last night prospect for breakfast not good x Made tea, which was too strong to drink x Later on found a few spuds which we boiled & ate our breakfast in a dripping trench - a spud on one hand & a chunk of bully in the other x Not so bad in the circo x Rotten morning - working on trench x For dinner few fried spuds bully beef biscuits & butter & tea x Later in evening rations came up on pack horses x Steak for tea. Which we are just cooking x All feeling much more cheerful at prospect good meal x Dull with drizzling rain occasionally x Felt much better after feed x Rain during night; on gas guard for 1½ hrs x Fair amount firing x Slept in wet trench x

9/21/1916 Dull but fine x Good feed x Had shave & [rinned] face in water (1/2 cup full) x Cut shoulder strap off Hun coat in trench x Plenty of dead still lying about x Paper (Sept 10) Uncle Geo x Sent p c's Mother, Aunt Amy & Annie x Very short of water x

9/22/1916 Beautiful fine morning x Ground drying quickly x Dried wet clothes x Huns shelled guns on our immediate right x Our No 4 gun killed a [wh] howitzer man (Mulligan) today owing to premature burst x Had first lazy afternoon since coming here x Commenced letter to Mother x Several air scraps x Saw a plane come toppling down over German lines x

9/23/1916 A rotten time for about 2 hours x We were awakened by the cry of gas! & at once put on our helmets, shells falling in the vicinity in the meantime x Two fell just alongside our trench x covered us with mud, thought it was time to shift, & went over to the howitzer position under the hill opposite x It was tear gas that the Huns were putting over & our eyes commenced to smart & run, & our throats became parched x While running across to shelter one of my boots came off in the mud, & I was on the point of leaving it there but thought better of it x Shells still falling round our position with much frequency, the Hun evidently being determined to give us a turn x A shell fell quite close to us & half buried one of the howitzer men x We then made tracks up the hill & sheltered in a shell hole x Tear gas still bad x After about 2 hours of one of the rottenest times I have spent we returned to our pits; where the gas still hung about x Had breakfast about 11, the Hun being heartily cursed for interfering with our meal x No 3 gun pit was partly blown in & one Tommy howitzer man was killed x Later some of us; myself included, were ordered back to our old position we evacuated on the 15 for a spell x Got

9/24/1916 (Sunday) finished letter to Mother x Had a quiet easy day x Fine x



9/25/1916 Fine day; lazy time x Our artillery did heavy firing from about 12 § infantry then attacked x took Goodecourt x (sic) Firing was terrific x Lot of heavies are about here x Hun sent over only about 1/2 dozen shells here x After attack I went up to the dressing station nearby § saw wounded § prisoners coming on x Great proportion wounds in arm x Prisoners were stretcher bearing x Poor specimens they looked most of them without hats x They seemed quite at home as prisoners x Looked very dejected x Great sight to see the men being attended to § taken away in cars § lorries x Everyone able to walk has to do so from the firing line; some looked done up by the time they reached dressing station x Enemy put up heavy barrage thro' Delville Wood, § for some time stretcher bearers unable to get thro' x Saw Indian Cavalry (Bengal Lancers) move out for action; but do not think they went in x

9/26/1916 Fine day x Went to wagon line for rations x Good deal firing morning, when own infantry again attacked x Bengal Lancers; understand, went into action x Saw them coming back; asking for water x Went over to dressing station evening; wounded still coming in x Posted letter to Kit & F.S. C. to Uncle Geo, Annie & E.B. x One of our aeroplanes landed 200 or 300 yds away owing to engine trouble x Some of the 13th manned a German whiz-bang battery yesterday, got off about 80 rounds on to a tank in No Man's Land; Said to have been used as a sniping station by Fritz x Then Imp----- I; three or four slightly wounded x

9/27/1916 Heavy firing most of day, the heavier being particularly active x Still enjoying a spell x Believe we are here for another 2 weeks, instead of being relieved x

9/28/1916 Fine x Comparatively quiet day x summary Harry Finney x Wrote Eccus & Miss White

9/29/1916 Dull & showery, Letters from Mother (Aug 8 - 15) Kit, Effie Pickles (3) & Daisy, & Thorntons Returned to my dug-out & enjoyed them x Fritz sent over some big stuff at intervals & we got showers of dirt & bits of shell on the roof of our "possy" x Our artillery active at night on the left x

- 9/30/1916 Went to wagon lines for rations; not feeling too good x In evening men at old "possy" went up forward to build new gun pits x Letters from Aunt Amy (19) paper (17) & papers from Effie & Kit x Wrote Eccus x
- 10/1/1916 Many happy returns Mother x Letter from Barry & Aunt Kate x Went to the wagon lines this morning to see Dr & was excused duties x Not feeling too good x Quiet day x Our Battery has been strafed a bit, one shell getting C sub pit but wounding [----] only 1 man x Driving guns to new "possy" tonight
- 10/2/1916 Feeling bit better x Rain & cold x Saw about 100 Hun prisoners captured by N Zealanders pass by; poor looking lot x Heavy firing in left at night
- 10/3/1916 Ordered to Field Hosptl x Had to report at nearest dressing station, about 20 mins' walk distance, where we were sent on to Cornay Station, mile or two away; from here on to another 1/2 hours' walk, where we (Barron & I) arrived at 2.45, after going 2 hrs with all our gear x Gave us tea & biscuit & after 2 hrs wait were put in motor lorry along with others & had an hours ride to the Rest Camp of the 51st Division, at Dive Copse x Dull day x 18th f.a
- 10/4/1916 Not a very good night x Slept on an ambulance stretcher; most sleeping on floor x No comfort about the place x Hauled out at 6.30, had wash then for breakfast; a cup of warm milk; dinner cup milk & rice; tea, cup of milk; supper do x Had a bad day x Warm bath x Rain x

10/5/1916 Good night, much better x In afternoon [went] in company with Barron & a 4th Lancer walked to a village looking for a feed x Only got bread & tinned fish x Sent p.c to Mother x

10/6/1916 Feeling good x In afternoon we went into another village & had a feed offered, bread & tinned haddock; also brought bread & butter x Go on orderly duty tomorrow; sneaked into meal this morning on another man's ticket x Wrote Joe x sent Aunt Amy p.c. commenced letters to Mother & Pickles x Fine x

10/7/1916 Cold & windy; heavy showers night x Put on ordinary diet x Arrangements for feeding several hundred men very bad x Have to line up two abreast & file into mess room, where food is served x Have to wait over an hour unless get [in] early x Breakfast: slice bread, piece cheese & butter & tea; dinner slice bread, little stew; tea; slice bread, butter; tin apricots among 16; my share  $\frac{1}{2}$  one! x 18th Field Ambulance name of Rest Hospital x

10/8/1916 (Sunday) x Discharged from Hospital x Told to report to C.T.O. at Corbie x Got there in motor ambulance; told to report to C.T.O. Mariencourt x (sic) Lucky to get lorry just outside & went thro' Bonnay & Haley; from here obtained [D ---hol--] motor car & had good ride thro' Albert & well towards Fricourt; dropped here & a few mins later got motor ambulance to [Montaban] road, where after about 1½ hrs walk found our wagon lines x Jolly glad to get there after about 4 hrs x Parcel waiting me from Aunt Amy, containing clothing x Very useful x During journey today sorry to learn I lost the clasp knife the Twinnies gave me; one of the most useful articles in my possession x

10/9/1916 At wagon lines x Letters from Uncle Geo (28th) & Annie x Posted letters to Mother Pickles and PC Uncle Geo x Wrote Annie x

10/10/1916 Nothing doing x Wrote E B x Fine x Few bombs been dropped hereabouts at night x

10/11/1916 Paper Uncle Geo (Oct 1) x Fine x General order from Genl Rawlinson Com. 4th Army congratulating N.Z. on work done in Somme x

10/12/1916 Quiet; dull but fine x We are said to be moving out in a few days x Wrote Uncle & Aunty x

10/13/1916 Joe has the flu x Fine but dull x Each night heavy stunt on; horizon one red flame x

10/14/1916 Papers from Kit (2) Aubrey & Harry Finney & Uncle Geo (8) Dull; usual firing at night x

- 10/15/1916 (Sunday) x Fine x Parcel tin biscuits from Effie; bon x Wrote Mother & Harry Finney x Two of my sub-x in Trentham Fox & Jacobs, have been killed x
- 10/16/1916 Letter from Uncle Geo (10th) Four "tanks" passed today; had a short ride on one x Joe got photographs x Likely to be here for some days now x Fine x Two Hun machines passed over this evening & drew tremendous amount of fire x More of our machines about x Plenty later on x
- 10/17/1916 Quiet day x Rain night x There are several powerful searchlights about here on lookout for aircraft which come over now & then & drop bombs x N.Z. mail tomorrow
- 10/18/1916 Letters from Mother (28 Aug) Rachel, Aunt Kate Twinnies Pickles, Aubrey, Una Garlick, Jean Ingram & E. B. (2) x Showery x Joe went away to field hospital x
- 10/19/1916 Posted letter to Sister Ingram & field cards to Twinnies, Ray, U G, EB & Nell x Letter from Mother (Aug 21) & pair mittens x Wed day; heavy firing last night & today x Wrote Thorntons & Daisy x

10/20/1916 Heavy firing night x Very cold; day cold but sunny x Witnessed exciting aeroplane fight in morning x Several of our machines & three Huns had a "go" x They circled & dived & spiralled & [aero]planed, the rat tat tat of machine guns being heard at the same time x How the planes darted hither & thither! From what we could make out at least 2 of the Hun machines were forced to earth within our lines x Our planes seemed to keep them within a circle, & gradually closing in on the enemy & leaving him little room for freedom of movement x Aerial activity all day x Supposed to be going out in a day & to be relieved by the 5th (Australian) division x

10/21/1916 Trafalgar Day! Cold night x Frost & ice this morning; Sunny x I've come back from Dive Copse despatched with Joe! Wrote note to Aunt Amy x

10/22/1916 (Sunday) "snorter" morning - ice & frost x Letters from Pickles x Hun aeroplanes rather cheeky today x Evening artillery active on gun positions & Australian Infantry been going [in] last day or two x

10/23/1916 Heavy fog morning x Went to canteen & bought stores for chaps x Road rough; shell holes etc x Letter Uncle Geo (16) & papers from Aunt Amy, Kit & Aubrey & card to Annie x

10/24/1916 posted letters to Mother & p c Uncle Geo x Went to Bercordel to [Canteau] x Wet day x Last few days big number Australians going into Somme x Passed hundreds today x Quite homely to see them x

10/25/1916 Rain x Australian artillery arrived to relieve us & our Rx moves off 6 tomorrow morning x Doherty, formerly in HB's at Nelson, is officer with the Australians, & had a yarn to him x Parcels from Aunt Amy & Cousin Annie x Cake, lollies, bananas from Annie; Toothbrush & powder, razor blades, chocolates & toffee from Aunt Amy x Bon! x

10/26/1916 Rx moved out early this morning x Reveille 4.30 x Very muddy showery x Australians had to leave their gun bogged last night, & take it in today

10/27/1916 Moved off at 7, reveille at 3.30 x Showers; cold wind x Took a different route this time to Bonnay, passing thro' Heilley & L'Ancre x Passed big crowd English Territorial's going up; very young & of inefficient physique many of them x This side of Fricourt saw Frank Rochfort on horse at head of A.S.C; called out, but he did not hear me x Arriving Bonnay 1 pm x Journey cold & driving showers x In good billet x Chocolate Aunty sent me came in handy on journey; also Annie's cake x During our seven weeks in the Somme we lost 2 men killed & between 20 & 30 wounded x We were lucky x Other batteries fared worse x At the end we had practically only one gun in action x



10/28/1916 Letters from Mother (Sept 3 to 12) Kit; Pickles, Eccus, Ray, Aubrey; Aunty; Lou Pirani & EB (& photo) x Fine x Routine work x

10/29/1916 (Sunday) Posted f.s. cards to Mother, Aunt Amy & Annie, Kit, Aunt Amy x commenced to go to Amiens in afternoon but got only as far as Corbie x Showers all day x Moving out tomorrow morning --- supposed to be trekking to Hazebrouck four or five days journey x

10/30/1916 Left Bonnay 8.30am & trekked to Pierrogot x Passed thro' following villages: Lahoussoye, Beherngcourt, Baelincourt; Melincourt; Haulle; Molliens x Arrived at about 1 pm x No rain during journey, but very threatening x Soon after arriving heavy rain fell for rest of afternoon x Pretty scenes, tree tops beginning to show rich golden tints x The motor lorries have various names: today we passed a "Dickens transport": Sam Weller, Dolly Varden, Barnaby Rudge; Pickwick; Micawber etc x On each vehicle was a painting of the particular character x Our horse lines here are a quagmire the roads are liquefied mud x Went to [Baumepra] in evening & had jolly evening with some Highlander laddies from Glasgow (H.C.I.) x

10/31/1916 Boisterous night x Moved off at 11.30 & pulled up at Amplier at about 9 or 10 x Tea (biscuits & cheese & tea) at 10.30 x Slept in canvas covered shacks x Sea of mud of consistency of paste x Passed thro' Raineville & Beauval x the latter a fairly big town & clean looking with a fine looking church entered by broad flight of steps Day was fine x Passed aerodrome & saw several planes starting x Stopped for few mins alongside apple orchard; apples for rest of journey x While stopping on road where Hun prisoners working, one of them asked one of us "are you from N.Z.?" Strafing German Front Lines Trenches x 13th Battery; cemetery, Armentières; May 25, 1916 Thro the 'Phone L x stand by Range 4550 B. A. 92.45 R Aiming pt, Left hand minaret on church x Report when ready Fire Fired Sir; \_ Drop 1000 x Cancel last order x Drop 700 from original range x What is the range x 3 800 have E. Fired Drop 200; repeat when ready to fire Ready Sir Fire! Fired Sir Drop 100 x report when ready to fire What range on now? 3,500 Sir Drop 200 fire when ready x Fired Sir What is range now? 3,300 Drop 150 x Ready to fire x

Fire x Fired Sir x Drop 100 Ditto Drop 50 x Fired Can you get Light at 11.30 & had long trek until 5.30, keeping chiefly to main road x Passed thro' large fine looking town of Doullens; and also smaller one Beauval Dequidt x Pretty church at latter place x Good horse lines & x best billet so far had in France x Old man of the house very affable & gave us apples x 1/c picquet night; rotten night, slept as I stood x Autumn tints on trees very fine - rich russet gold tips tops of bush & avenues & not touches up the landscape x Roads for miles lined with trees x Linchy sur Cinche name of village stayed in x

11/2/1916 Reveille 4.30 moved off 7 x Rain for first three or four hours; then fine x Passed thro' mostly small villages; Nuncq, Flers, etc x Roads wind in & out among villages as if roads had been built after houses put up x Pulled up at Heuchin at 3pm x Billets rotten x

11/3/1916 Reveille 5.30, moved off 8 x Foggy & cold for start but weather clearing somewhat later, & we pulled up at Berguette at about 1 pm x Billet good & wagon lines grass x Beautiful artesian pool of water at our billet x Passed thro [Westre--] & other small villages x Keeping as usual on outskirts of big towns Sound of Guns x Passed church 1861 x We are about 7 Kilos (sic) off Aire x [Ch--- --] x Big munitions works close by x Had a hair cut for 2d also chips & coffee, etc; one of sss the cleanest tow villages yet been in x

11/4/1916 Reveille 5.30 raining in night & little in morning x Moved off 7 x Other part of village very clean; the kiddies at the doorways being neatly dressed & with hair tidy & clean faces x Contrast to some villages in Somme district x Passed thro Merville and I (sic) good town with nice shops x Pulled up at Vieux Berquin at 1.30 x Good billets & fair wagon lines x Likely to be here for a day or two x Went with Joe to Merris in evening x Helped to pinch some railway sleepers off line for [links] in morning x

11/5/1916 Wrote Mother, Aunt Amy & Annie x Fine but cold winds,  
Went into Vieux Berquin & had feed pork chop & onion, 3  
eggs, chipped potatoes, bread, butter & coffee x Eggs 3d each;  
meat 1s/2d for slice x Pay day; drew 20 francs x Grazed  
horses in morning; grooming afternoon x

11/6/1916 Wet morning x In afternoon walked to Bailleul (a fairly  
large town) & visited cousin Nev's grave; making  
arrangements to have a boxwood border put round it x Band  
playing in the square x Had cup of tea at YWCA canteen x  
Got ride home in side car x Letter from Sister Ingram & also  
parcel from Mother for Jean x Lx moving off to [five] position  
in the morning x Wrote to Jean & Cousin Blanche x

11/7/1916 Heavy rain all day; Kept to billets x At 4 pm we (Lx) had 10 mins to prepare to move off, & we had to bustle x Raining hard; had a long wait after getting to starting point x No time for tea x Rained for better part of journey, then fine x Lost our way to our position; & when we arrived at the one we were told we had to relieve found the 10th in possession x Had a cup of coffee here at farm house x No sign of our advance party x Eventually we found the Battery we had to relieve (the 60th Australian) just up the road x Passed our wagon lines over ankle deep in mud; water everywhere x Enough to make a man weep x Got fired up & retired to bed at about 1 o'clock; (sic) [---] to eat x Had some trouble in finding our billet; & when found had to get a calf out of the way before making our bunks x The animal commenced bleating very early in morning x Everyone very wet x Passed thro Estaires x

11/8/1916 Mud, & slush as over boot tops; water running over streets x Australians moved out; wagons in water up to axle x Feet wet all day x Guns seven or eight miles from wagon pits x Latter not far from Estaires x Showery x Q.M.S. fell into ditch last night entrance to our billet x We have bunks; should be comfortable inside; very bad outside x Parcel from Cousin Annie (cake) & fruit kit (Pascells) & Mother x Lucky if I am not sick in the next few days x Very nice indeed getting parcels x Right x moved in today x

- 11/9/1916 Happy returns Wop x [Sunny] day; squaring up our stables  
 & billets x Issued with winter underclothing x Leather  
 waistcoats x Letter Aunt Amy x
- 11/10/1916 Posted a.s.c. to Mother Aunt Amy & cousin Annie & letters to  
 Hall, Jean Ingles Cousin Blanche & Kit x Fine day x
- 11/11/1916 Wrote Mother x Paper from Aunt Amy x Brigade orderly x  
 Spent half morning looking for right place x Nothing to do x  
 Had coffee at a house where a very nice old lady & her  
 daughter were x Change in weather coming x All spare  
 gunners went up to guns x
- 11/12/1916 Fine day; straightening up wagon lines; shovelling mud x Lt  
 A. Jones killed at the guns x Paper from Aubrey x Wrote  
 Annie x
- 11/13/1916 Year since I left Wellington x Fine; shovelling muck x Letters  
 from Mother (Sept 19,27) Eccus, Daisy, Rachel, Aubrey, Kit,  
 Pickles, Koi & Harry Finney x Got them after tea & had a  
 lovely time reading them lying on my bunk x
- 11/14/1916 Wrote Aunt Amy x Not feeling too good x Parcel Aunt Amy  
 (Slones - canagan cap)I x Ack. by p.c x Sent to No 2 NZ  
 Field Amb, (sick of influenza, high temp 103 & aching all  
 over x )
- 11/15/1916 Feeling better; well looked after x
- 11/16/1916 Feeling ditto x Well fed (Dr good chap (Dr [Millomert]) Met  
 Polly Perkins at Hospital

11/17/1916 Doing well; cold weather x

11/18/1916 Very cold night x Snow falling; every- thing white when I peeped out of window this morning x Got up x Later on rain fell & snow thawed x Very bleak & cheerless day x Had gramophone selections Went to Div Rest Station 100 yards away x Put into cosy hut with fire, iron bedsteads, mattresses coconut matting on floor x Mat alongside each bed x Fire in stove burning merrily & I was greeted with "Come in lad" by a grey-haired friendly old veteran wearing enough ribbons to make pair football pants x Pair warm slippers alongside bed x Not long before sitting before fire reading recent issue of "Life" x Absolutely bully! Cold outside but as cosy as cosy inside x Had good nights rest & was warm for the first time for several days x Plenty to eat for tea x Good old N. Z.

11/19/1916 (Sunday) Bleak day x Had good nights rest x Porridge, boiled bacon (hot) coffee, bread butter & jam breakfast; dinner roast beef green peas, dried vegetables, sago, bread & butter jam, also bit chocolate; tea, cold meat, soup, cocoa, bread butter jam x attended church service afternoon, text 15 St John x Wrote Mother & Aunt Amy x

11/20/1916 Fine day x Met Bert Richards Dick Talbot, Don, Barry, Charlie Morgan x Went for walk; legs pretty shakey x Wrote Billy Simpson x

- 11/21/1916 Fine; went to baths; feeling very achey x Wrote Annie x
- 11/22/1916 Had rotten night; legs painíng badly;
- 11/23/1916 Feeling good; going out tomorrow x
- 11/24/1916 Discharged from Hospital x Feeling all right except for pains in legs x Letter from Annie; papers Aunt Amy, Kit & Uncle G x Got new tunic (first since army in Trentham), boots etc x
- 11/25/1916 Rainy day; took things easy x Wrote Mother and Annie; paper from Aunt Amy x Sent 36 pc's to friends x
- 11/26/1916 (Sunday) Letters from Mother (Oct 1 - 10th) Kit, Koi, Effie, Mrs Angus, Miss Gun, Nell, Aunt Challie, Aunt Kate & E.B. Fine x Mother's & Aunt Kate's xmas parcel from Harrods per Aunt Amy x
- 11/27/1916 Wrote Mrs Angus; pc to Aunt Amy x Fine day x Wrote Miss Trim
- 11/28/1916 Foggy x Wrote E.B; limbs achíng x
- 11/29/1916 Raw day; went on sick parade with former complaint; temp 101.2 x Feeling rotten x
- 11/30/1916 Letters from Aunt Amy (25) & B. Cooke (Oct 9) x Put off duty by Dr for few days x Dull & cold Wrote Lou Pirani & Aunt Amy x
- 12/1/1916 Still cold, dull & foggy x Cracked a bottle of champagne with Joe & Wilk in latter's "boudoir" x
- 12/2/1916 Weather ditto



- 12/3/1916 (Sunday) Weather ditto x Parcel from Mother (2 tins biscuits) & another tin sweets cocoa, nuts etc & tin brandy balls from Harry Finney x Wrote Mother x Letter from ? (sic)
- 12/4/1916 Sun shone for an hour or two in the morning; dull again in afternoon x "Heads" inspected wagon lines x Did a bit of work today x Letter from B. Cook x "Weekly Dispatch" Aunt Amy
- 12/5/1916 Cold showers; went out exercising afternoon x Sent A.S.C. to B. Cook x
- 12/6/1916 Little sunshine; cold wind x Exercising morning; pay day; drew 10 frs (2-17-4)
- 12/7/1916 Dull & foggy x Paper Eccus' Wedding x
- 12/8/1916 Ditto with showers x Parcel (handkerchiefs & soap) from Mother; "Press" from Effie x Got parcel from Ch/ch Liverpool C'tte (milk, cigarettes, soap, socks & cocoa) x Parcel from Mr Lock (box cigars, socks & handkerchiefs) x Acknowledged same by letter x
- 12/9/1916 Wet day x Went into Estaires & had bath x Wrote Effie x & Mr Lock
- 12/10/1916 (Sunday) Cold & showery x Wrote Mother x

- 12/11/1916 Melle, Julia Cachel Rue du College Estaires Nord In company with "Snowy" I spent the evening at M'lle's place; the old people; two sisters & a brother made up the family x Had quite a good time trying to learn French x The girls knew enough English to make themselves understood x Nice sunny day x Letter from Aunt Amy x x Uncle Geo; also enclosed letter from Ray & Gert re xmas parcel x
- 12/12/1916 During forenoon fall of snow ; afternoon rain x Not so cold as I thought it would be x Looked very pretty as the flakes fell
- 12/13/1916 Letter from Cousin Annie x (8th) & parcel from Selfridge's (Mother & Aunty, xmas present x Dull & cold x Sent a.s.c. to Uncle & Cousin Annie x Reveille at 6 now x "Heads" not satisfied with condition of harness, so we are getting "got at" until it is clean x Men came down from guns to assist x
- 12/14/1916 Few mins sunshine; also rain & dull x Had a yarn to Geo Garlick & Condell (Stoke) x Letter from Jean Ingram x
- 12/15/1916 cold & dull x Case measles in billet x
- 12/16/1916 Clear sky in morning, & sun rose pale red x No strength in sun, & soon usual mist came up x Letters from Mother (Oct 15 - 24) Koi & Pickles, Aunt Kate, Effie, Ray, Miss Thornton, Putty, & EB x Paper Aunt Amy x
- 12/17/1916 Dull & foggy x Wrote Mother & Aunt Amy x (Sunday) x

- 12/18/1916 Year since I arrived at Suez x Cold & foggy x Two parcels from Annie (cake, toffee, pickled walnuts sox (sic) fruit, paste, fruit, shortbread, etc x Bon x Wrote Annie & f.s.c. to E.B., Miss Thorntons, & Twinnies
- 12/19/1916 Wrote Jean Ingram x Fall of snow; everything soon very white x Nell's wedding day x
- 12/20/1916 Little sunshine x Wrote B. Cooke
- 12/21/1916 Auckland Weekly from Aubrey x Rain, wind & cold x
- 12/22/1916 Cold & dull x & Heavy rain x Sent cable Effie x
- 12/23/1916 Gale of wind; rain
- 12/24/1916 Bright sunny morning; the best one for weeks x Took horses exercise & had grand ride x Afternoon went to Estaires & bought menu cards for feed tomorrow x Had tea with Joe; who later in the evening thought it was N Years Eve & celebrated it in usual Scottish way x Letter & photo from Sister; Wrote Aunt Amy x

- 12/25/1916 1916 Estaires France xx Pte N H Hall Hereford (Eng). xx  
 Dvr S Jeffries Waitara xx Gunr Wm that Evans (Timaru) xx  
 F Wise Rona Bay Wellington xx Sad G R Whaler  
 Wellington xx A Donovan, Auckland xx Geo H Langer Corpl  
 A.S.C, Birmingham xx Cpt A E [Cameron] Milton xx Jim  
 Raybourn Auckland xx Bomb. J. A. McNab (Hastings) xx  
 Dvr J. M. Ford. Murchison xx " R. L. Brown Wellington xx "  
 have E. Wiggins Wellington N.Z. xx " W. [Benban]  
 Wellington N.Z. xx " A. B. Porter. Fielding N.Z. xx Gnr  
 Leslie G Scott. Clyde xx Driver R Everett Nelson xx Gnr.  
 A. McCausland. Amberley xx Dvr S G Compton  
 Wellington xx Dvr C I Neill. Auckland xx Gnr G. that  
 Blackham (Timaru NZ) lè à le [eguè mart] 8 years  
 Mèlanie [Cyuèmart] Jeanne Devalal Marie Debbarre Emile  
 Ssoig Germaine Devalal xx Rain in morning but cleared  
 up later on x Had the hamper Mother & Aunty Sent me; with  
 Joe; very tasty; & much enjoyed x Light day & only fed up &  
 watered horses x Cracked bottle champagne with Joe & Wilk x  
 In evg had dinner down the road, at a farmhouse great spread  
 (see menu) & good time x All present signed name in my
- 12/26/1916 (Boxing Day) Rain morning & evening x "carried on" as  
 usual x very thick fog morning x Wrote Mother, Sister &  
 Harry Finney x
- 12/27/1916 Fine but cloudy; heavy fog at night x Letter from Mother  
 (Nov 1 - 7) Kit; Koi; Pickles (2 & photo) Howie, Eccus,  
 Aubrey (2) Uncle Geo (Nov 28, sent to hospital for me) x  
 xmas pudding from Miss M. Ward x
- 12/28/1916 Wrote Miss Ward, heavy frost; very slippery for horses; little  
 sun in morning x

- 12/29/1916 Wet & windy x Wrote to Eccus; A.S.C. to Howie, Aubrey, Twinnies, Putty, Aunt Amy & Annie x
- 12/30/1916 Heavy rain in night x Went to guns at Fleurbeux x Fired several rounds; got smack with buffer x Outside a house on the edge of the road, I noticed four bundles of sheaves with stalks inwards, in the form of a cross x In the centre was a plot of chrysanthemum plants, & over sheaves were several pieces of ivy & on enquiry was told that a girl of about 23 had died in the house, hence the cross
- 12/31/1916 (New Year's Eve) Thinking of all at home. wonder what they are doing x In bed all day; leg very painful in night and today & Commenced to read "The Story of Great Armada (Hale) - very interesting x So long 1916; better luck next year! God Save
- 1/1/1917 Drill; Fritz very brisk shelling roads x We retaliated x Sent of, (sic) s.p.c. to Mother x In bed all day; Dr says leg very severely bruised x In evening very heavy bombardment direction Armentières x

1/2/1917 Sunny for few mins; rest dull, rain evening x About 6pm Fritz opened out rather viciously; we retaliated & he closed down x Wrote Mother & Aubrey x Letter Mrs Blackburne x Our guns (L x, now 1 & 2) are on sight destroyed farmhouse, known as Six Poplar Farm, from 6 Poplars growing alongside) x Nos 3 & 4 in Farmhouse about 300 yards distant x Maoris (Pioneers) have been working taking away bricks for road nearby x They stop now & then to play 2-up x Sometimes one chap will speak in Maori & will be answered in English x Leg pretty sore; put hot fomentations on it x

1/3/1917 Dull; did some washing x Quiet day x Parcel from Aunt Chally & Nell - cake, biscuits, duff, cigarettes, sardines, sweets - great joy when opening up parcel x Thanks! Wrote Cora Mac x Letter Uncle Geo

1/4/1917 very wet most of day x Wrote U. G. Mail bag with outward letters got lost from cape cart last night; but was found & returned x Letters bit damp x I had to re-address my two x Aero guard x

1/5/1917 Clear sky; but sun weak x Rain at night x Letters from Dick (12/12/16) & paper Aunt Amy x Aeroplanes active x Quiet day x Wrote Aunt Chally x Gun guard x Went down to canteen & on way met Don Bunning & King; also Kingston (late Nelson)

1/6/1917 Wrote Dick, letters from Uncle Jack & Daisy x Cold & dull x Pay day drew 20 frs x Paper from Kit x

- 1/7/1917 (Sunday) Dull; went to O.Pip in afternoon x Met Bill Lucre on way x Paper Aunt Amy x Wrote Mother
- 1/8/1917 Fritz sent a few over in our vicinity nearest about 50 yards x Also shelled roads x Wet & windy in afternoon but fine in forenoon x
- 1/9/1917 Rocket guard x Cold & showery x Wrote E.B x Quiet day x
- 1/10/1917 Fine, but cold & cloudy x In forenoon went to Fleur Beaux & bought spuds & sugar (1d lb) x Afternoon collected firewood from old gun pits & cooked tea (spuds onions & bully beef all mixed) x Heavy firing for some minutes on our left x Washed & oiled my feet x
- 1/11/1917 Light fall snow morning x Parcel from "Kit & [pcl] Annies" - sauce, almonds & muscatels, biscuits, etc x Jolly decent x Had sauce with boiled neck mutton for tea - voted bon x The cook tried hand at making pikelets & turned out some good pancakes x While getting into my bunk I ricked a muscle or tendon of my neck - very stiff & painful all day; Reading "From One Sensation to Another" (Merriman) x Ack parcel from Kit by f.s.c x
- 1/12/1917 Snow & rain x Quiet day x afternoon went to Fleurbeaux x
- 1/13/1917 Snow most of the day x Orderly guard x Wrote Kit Quiet day; bombardment on left x Had roasted chestnuts x

1/14/1917 (Sunday) - Snow lay on ground all day x Church in morning; first chance I have had for nearly five months Chaplain - Colonel Burton, of Ch/ch preached x Service held in yard of public building snow on ground & ruined outbuildings x Several big trees with branches cut off by shells x said he was being recalled to England & left as a message the words "Whatsoever thou art told to do, do it" or words to that effect x On Rocket Guard x Gas guard x

1/15/1917 Snow still covers ground x Wrote Mother, Dorothy & f.s.c. to Uncle Geo, Annie & Sister x Fair amount of firing; our guns were shooting,

1/16/1917 Letters from Mother (Nov 14 - 19) Kit, Pickles, Koi, EB, Aunty Ray, Blanche, Miss White, Hui Harrison, Cora Mac & parcel from Kit; paper Aunt Amy x Lovely time reading them x Dull & cold day; snow still on ground

1/17/1917 Sleet fell all last night & up till 1 pm today x Two or 3 inches snow this morning x Went to O P. Orderly gun x Posted f.s.c. to Kit Twinnies, Mother, Blanche, & Hui Harrison x Had feed eggs (8) & chips x & coffee (2 frs)

1/18/1917 Plenty of snow on ground x Had great snow fight x Dull x

1/19/1917 Snow this evening a little x Went to Div. baths Sailly for bath x Rocket Guard x Pay day; drew 35 franc

1/20/1917 Hard frosts, snow very hard x Wrote Annie x



1/21/1917 (Sunday) Parcels from Mother (mittens) & Effie (lemon crystals), letter from Aunt Amy & paper x Cook today x Orderly gun x Still freezing x Wrote Mother x

1/22/1917 Saw blue sky today; first time for several days x Thaw set in x We have been made into a 6-gun battery one section of 10th joining us x We are moving out at end of month for training & there it is said will take over section covered at present by 1st Brigade x Now evening 17 degrees of frost x Went to gun pit to sleep x

1/23/1917 Parcel & letter from Annie (Jan 4) x Cake, sardines, salmon, apples, oranges, & sweets x Très bon! Letters from Mother (Nov 26, Dec ); Aunty; Pickles & Effie x Wrote Annie x Gun guard! Hard frost all day x Temp 21 x Blue sky & sun all day - the first time this year x Altho' sun shining, it had not the slightest effect on the ice & snow; on the contrary water soon froze at any time during the day x Writing this in gun pit in from of a fire x Not much firing last few days x A few aeroplanes busy today x

1/24/1917 Fine & sunny but still freezing x Washed in warm water after dinner, & in less than half-an hour the water which had splashed on the ground had a thin coating of ice x The pools & streams are frozen hard, & we were trying to skate on it today x Parcel from Nurse Barnes - soap; tooth paste & brush, lanoline (for the complexion!) & cigarettes x I used my last tube of toothpaste this morning so it came in the nick of time x Thanks x Rocket guard x Forgot to mention that yesterday we made a rolly-poly, & it was bon!

1/25/1917 Still fine & cold x Pot of ink found frozen x Had strafe last night from 1.30 until 5.30 x Rocket Guard x Sleeping in gun pit; came off r.g. at 2 & no sleep until about 6 x O Píp in afternoon & returned to wagon lines x On way down saw Tom White & Bill Lucre x Going to O Píp met Bernard Jeffries x

1/26/1917 Fine & cold x Big frozen pond in our grounds & we got good skating or sliding x Letter from Aunt Amy (Jan 21) x Ice several inches thick x

1/27/1917 Weather ditto x Last night rumours of Hun attack at Armentières, & said to have captured our third line trenches from Australians x Something in rumour as infantry in Estaires in billets had to leave at half's hours notice x All motor lorries were also called out x The centre sections of each battery also moved somewhere x Kaiser's birthday today (darn him) & no doubt Huns want to show him something for his money x This afternoon our guns were also moved some distance to the left of their position x to Bois Grenier x Parcel (chewing gum) from Aubrey; & soldiers diary & photo of Phyllis, Joan & Bill from Nell x Children x Bon little girls x Wrote Thorntons x Wrote Mother x

1/28/1917 (Sunday) Weather ditto x Parcels of Pascalls sweets from Ray & Thornton clan; also parcel from Aunt Amy for Mother; & letter from Sister x Half-holiday went to Estaires x Last few days been heavy firing x Two Hun planes over today x Last night we moved our gun positions about 3000 yards to left of former ones, which were taken over by 9th Battery x Letter from Sister Vaggis x Wrote Nell & cards to children x

1/29/1917 Wrote Rachel x Weather ditto x Enjoyable ride in afternoon x

1/30/1917 Change in weather; snow fell intervals day & fair quantity at night x Exercising; afternoon went to Merville x Outside British cemetery saw motor lorry draw up with coffin inside covered by Union Jack x Padre & several soldiers there x Rather pathetic sight x Parcel of Pyjamas muffler & balaclava, tube of cocoa, & tin toffee Aunt Amy x

1/31/1917 Little snow; aeroplanes busy x R x played L x football & were beaten 9-0 x Touch line umpire x Wrote Aunt Amy x Few changes going on in Battery x

2/1/1917 Anniversary of City of Nelson x Fine & warm x Good conditions for aeroplanes which were active x Good ride in afternoon; air very exhilarating x Wrote Aunt Amy x

2/2/1917 Papers from Mother (Mail) & Auckland Weekly x Lovely day; no wind, nice & warm x Had yarn Noely Jacobs x

2/3/1917 Weather ditto x Cleaned wagons in morning x Afternoon L x beat R x at football 6 - 0 x Went to gun in evening 1/c fatigue party x Had short yarn Charlie Hamilton on way in Sailley (sic) x Parcel from Sister x

2/4/1917 (Sunday) Weather ditto x Getting wood all day from ruined building down road x Gas alarm last night but did not come to our section x Reported gas shells fell in Fleurbaix this morning & gassed two N. Zealanders x Icy cold all night x

2/5/1917 Little snow early morning; rest day fine & warm x Day before yesterday Huns put over gas shells behind our trenches with the wind blowing towards their own lines & caught some of our boys - said to be about 100 x The advance party - 57th Division Territorials C Battery - have arrived to take over x New division & have been training in England for about two years, having gone to Ireland at time of rebellion x We are supposed to be moving out in about 20 days x Pay day - drew 20 fcs x Wrote Mother; f.s.c. to Mother Sister & Annie

2/6/1917 weather ditto; but cold wind x still on wood party x

2/7/1917 weather ditto x Went back to wagon lines x Eight of us in Cape Cart; close squeeze x Letters from Mother (Dec 12 - 17) Kit Boy Twinnies & Ray x Got to billet about 11.15 & read letters before turning in x

2/8/1917 weather becoming warmer during day x Our Battery position was shelled this morning & the gunners ["--pshied"] x No 4 gun ("D") was damaged & had to be sent to ordnance x Also "strafed" our former position x No casualties among out Battery x Hun aeroplane over evening before x Got job for few days in orderly room at W.L x

- 2/9/1917 weather ditto x Two Hun "planes" came over our lines today & were heavily "strafed" x Two of ours (one on east flank) came along swiftly as if trying to head them off x A shell case from ante air craft gun fell few yards from orderly room & threw clods of earth over it x Went to Estaires in evening x Wrote sister x
- 2/10/1917 weather ditto x 11th Battery beat 13th at football 6 -2 x
- 2/11/1917 (Sunday) x Cloudy & warm; thawing x Letter from Bry Basset & Daisy (also photo) x Wrote Mother; p.c. to Twinnies Pickels, Dorothy, Boy & Aunt Kate x Paper Aunt Amy x
- 2/12/1917 Little rain; thawing quickly x Letter Uncle Geo; parcel Mrs Blackburne; papers Ray x Wrote to EB. x p.c's to Bry Basset x Daisy x
- 2/13/1917 ~~Letter Uncle Geo (Feb 7) P/c to Aunt Amy x Weather fine x~~  
~~Lx Mtd parade x Went to Doulie evening x~~
- 2/14/1917 Hard frost; sunny day x Ice covered with water in creek opposite x R x mounted parade x
- 2/15/1917 weather fine; nothing much doing x "Bucksheeh (sic) parcels x
- 2/16/1917 looks like rain x Wrote Mrs Blackburne & p.c. to Uncle Geo & Mother Expect to move out on Monday to Steenworck x

2/17/1917 Melle Marie Boucherie au Douheu par Estaires Nord This young Melle I met in an estaminet; at Doulien (sic) She had a smile which reminded me very much of Nell's; so I asked her to write her name in my diary x "Oui; you correspond after the war?" she asked x "Oui" says I x Rain in evening first for some weeks x Thawing rapidly, & plenty of mud x Birds are commencing to sing - mating season x

2/18/1917 Dull & foggy x Quiet day x

2/19/1917 Letter from Aunt Amy; paper from Holly, Rachel & Aunty x Sent p.c. to Holly x Rain x Wxxxxther

2/20/1917 Rain; very mucky x Moving to new wagon lines tomorrow morning x Horse died today; their rations lately have been very small & the poor animals are half starved x

2/21/1917 Moved off 10 am; Dull & misty, & road near W.L. under water x Reached new p W.L. about 1 hr later x Had been occupied by Tommies; and the billets were left in a condition that a pig would turn up his nose at x It is always the same when we go into billets previously occupied by Tommies x They are filthy brutes, & it says little for their officers to allow such a state of things to prevail x R x guns came out this evening x Wrote Mother & E.B.

2/22/1917 Dull & foggy x L C x gun came out x

2/23/1917 Dull & foggy x B S M Tyler received move to proceed to O.T.C.; & in evening we assembled at the corner pub & gave him a send-off x Great time x Made presentation to guest evening x All sincerely sorry he is going; he has treated everyone of us fairly & squarely, & will be a long time before we get such an efficient & popular N.C.O.

2/24/1917 Half-holiday; went to pictures at Steenwerck with Joe & Wilk x Good performance x

2/25/1917 (Sunday) In evening went to YMCA service; several well known hymns, a short lesson & ditto sermon x (Paul in prison he spoke about) x Paper from Aunt Amy; also gloves & papers from Holly x Wrote long letter to Howie; & gave to S.M. Tyler who leaves for England tomorrow to post for me x Papers from Holly x

2/26/1917 Fine x C x guns moved to new position x In evening went to picture with Joe & "Wilk" x Charlie Chaplin x John Bunny & Romeo and Juliet among programme x

2/27/1917 Dull & chilly x Went to Steenwerk afternoon & had warm bath; also went same place evening x R & L x guns moved to position x We are in Ploegstreet (sic) facing Messines x

2/28/1917 Dull x Steenwerck evening & met Martin (Stoke) at YMCA x Moving out to new wagon lines tomorrow, Pickle's birthday; sent her a card; letter to Uncle Geo & p.c to Annie x



3/1/1917 Moved off 1.15 pm for new wagon lines, near border of Belgium x For the first time the weather was warm & sunny for the shift x Trip  $\frac{3}{4}$  hrs x As usual in taking over from Tommies (in this case 112th Battery, 56th Division) the billets were filthy x Great aeroplane activity, several bits of shells & bullets falling in our lines x Taking advantage of temporary absence of our planes, a Hun airman made a dash at one of our observation balloons at Point Nieppe; & fired his machine gun at it x The two observers came down in their parachutes; so far as we could observe, the balloon was undamaged & the observers landed safely x Our Anti-aircraft guns gave Hun lively time; but he did not stay long x We are right alongside R E dump x

3/2/1917 Fatigue work all day x R x shelled; no-one hurt x Many Happy returns to all the "Marches" x

3/3/1917 R x again shelled; a bivvy hit none hurt x Cold & dull x Pictures evening x Have obtained piano for mess room x 1/C fodder for a week

3/4/1917 (Sunday) Still Cloud & sunshine;  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday, YMCA service evening x Am reading "Hard Times" (quite appro!)

3/5/1917 cold & dull; Snow commenced to fall early this morning, & at reveille (now 6) quite an inch of snow on ground x Letters from Mother (Dec 27 - 31); Kit, Pickles, & paper from Aunt Amy x

- 3/6/1917 Cold & dull x Wrote Mother; and acknowledged Liverpool parcels from Miss Daisy Brice (Wgtn) Miss Hursthouse Hutt; & Countess of Liverpool friend (Wgtn) x
- 3/7/1917 Bitterly cold wind all day x Paper from Aunt Amy x Good deal of grim fire x A N.Z. in the reinforcement camp up the road was struck by a bullet; while sitting in his billet; & was killed x Accidental ; I expect Parcel socks & mittens from Mrs Thornton x Howies
- 3/8/1917 Snow squalls x Letter (17) from F. S. P. Mother (Jan 1 - 8 /M) Pickles (2) Twinnies (also handkerchief) (2 each) Kit; Ray; Aunty; Uncle Jack Thornton's, Mrs Blair, Putty, Hui Harrison, & Harry Finney x Good!
- 3/9/1917 Beautiful morning; but by midday snow squalls were falling x In forenoon a Hun plane came over our lines & received a hot reception from "Archies" x Heard later it came to earth at Armentières, & was smashed, the pilot dying soon after x
- 3/10/1917 Little snow; dull & misty x YMCA band concert by 3rd Aus. Division in evening x Our tucker has improved, each man putting in 2 fr's for extra food x

- 3/11/1917 Acknowledged Liverpool parcels Miss Daisy Brice (Wellington) Mrs Hursthouse (Granny) Hutt, Mrs Leaner (W'port), & Mrs Hewat (Oamaru); letter to Miss Thornton & p.c's to Ray, Hui Harrison; Miss Thornton, Dorothy & Hall x Fine morning but cloudy x Great plane activity x Two Huns came over & attempted once more to destroy observation at Nieppe x Observers parachuted to earth under heavy machinegun fire x Huns hovered about at great rate & eventually set fire to balloon; & a minute later a black column of smoke was all that was left x One of our machines now came up & chased the Huns x We saw flame break out on ours, but soon went out & he continued his chase; succeeding in chasing enemy home x On his return big rent was seen in one of his wings x Heard later; that a German balloon was similarly dealt with by one of our airmen, who were returning; met the two Huns & destroyed them x Papers from Hall; Kit, Aunty, Eff; & pocketbook from Fred x YMCA at night x
- 3/12/1917 Heavy rain at night x & showers during day x Guns heavily shelled x Letter from E.B. Wrote E.B
- 3/13/1917 Wrote Mother; wet & dull; pictures night x
- 3/14/1917 Dull with rain x Sent EB two handkerchiefs x Paper from Kit x
- 3/15/1917 Sun shining; Aeroplane activity afternoon x Wrote Uncle & Aunty & Annie x
- 3/16/1917 Lovely morning; afternoon dull x Letter from Aunt Amy; papers from Kit x

3/17/1917 St Pat's day x & Girt's wedding day x Beautiful sunny day; aeroplanes very active; Germans more so over our lines than usual x Wrote Aunt Amy Inspection by General Johnston, who in a short address, said we would soon be in heavy fighting & impressed upon us the necessity of keeping ourselves & the horses fit x

3/18/1917 (Sunday) Fine day; great many of our planes about x Saw 10 coming home together x YMCA evening x preacher Rev de Vitre chaplain H M Navy x Text 22nd Luke x

3/19/1917 Boisterous day; showers night x Wrote Mother x Paper from Kit; letter EB. x

3/20/1917 Wrote E.B. Snow showers & rain x Very cold x YMCA evening to hear concert by the "Balloonatics"; of the Royal Flying Corps x Splendid programme on Pierrot lines; songs; choruses & sleight of hand x Heard of success of Somme offensive - fall of Peronne & Bapaume x

3/21/1917 Pay day; drew 60 frs x Bought present for family & Kit x Paper from Kit & Aunty x Showery x Persistent rumour Lloyd George assassinated x

3/22/1917 Snow during night & during days snow showers and bright sunshine x Letter from Effie x Sent parcels to Mother, Kit & Nell x

3/23/1917 paper from Kit x Fine day x Wrote to Annie; received a parcel from Annie; bon! x Concert in canteen by 3rd Aust Division!; [---er] very good x

- 3/24/1917 Lovely day; early this morning intensive bombardment; Germans made raid on Otago tunnels; our guns opened up; & terrific uproar for some time x Went to Nieppe for bath x Paper from Aunt Amy x
- 3/25/1917 (Sunday) C x shelled this morning; & 3 men in cookhouse wounded x YMCA evening x Wrote Thorntons x
- 3/26/1917 Rain x During last few days artillery more active than usual x E. gun pit has been knocked in & gun damaged x Steenwerk evening x Wrote Mother
- 3/27/1917 Sunshine, 6.30; 9.30, snow; rain; 4.30 bright sunshine x
- 3/28/1917 Parcel from Aunt Amy; acknowledged same; letter from EB. Wrote EB x Fine day; One of the men wounded few days ago has died (Willoughby) x
- 3/29/1917 Rain most of day x Not much doing
- 3/30/1917 Parcel chocolate Ray x Rain & cloudy x Hail x
- 3/31/1917 Letter Mother (27 -29) Aunty Ray, Uncle Jock, Uncle Geo, Annie x Rain & fine x Hail
- 4/1/1917 Palm Sunday Fine morning x Snow showers (showers) afternoon x Battery inspected by Genl Johnston x YMCA song service evening x Two letters from EB x Wrote Holly, Ray, Muriel Muir Spinster's Club, Wellington

- 4/2/1917 Fall snow during night x § squalls during day x Wrote Mother § EB x Papers from Eff x One of our 'planes descended close to our lines in a ploughed field; had a broken cylinder; accident x
- 4/3/1917 Early morning furious snow blizzard raging, continuing until about 10, when it somewhat abated x Continued then at intervals; but sun shining at 4, § very calm § cloudy x The worst day we have experienced this winter x Ammunition continues to be dumped along railway line § must be several 100,000 rounds now, Guarded by several machine (Hotchkiss) guns in case Huns attack § fly too low for "Archies" x
- 4/4/1917 Letters from Mother (Feb 4 -11) Effie, Aunty, Kit, Pickles, § Mrs Gunn x Met John Reid (Aubrey's friend); also letter from Annie (March 23) x Fine but dull x 7th Battery beat us at football 8 - 3 x
- 4/5/1917 Fine day x Baths afternoon x Walk with Reid evening x Bought piece lace Aunt Amy § Annie x In evening eight of our machines returned from over Hun lines x Huns tried to bring down a balloon by shrapnel x

4/6/1917 Good Friday Year by Easter time since we left Havre for Les Ciseaux x Early morning today beautifully fine, & plenty of planes about x One Hun came right over our lines, taking matters coolly, & ran the gauntlet of severe anti - aircraft x First time I have noticed a Hun taking no notice of such an attack x A squadron of eight of ours later on went over Hun territory, evidently on a raiding errand x Afternoon showery x America at war at last x Parcel from Jean Ingram - abdullas, sausages, shortbread, sweets; bon, many thanks Jean x Saw Squee Hall, concert in canteen x

4/7/1917 Beautiful day x In evening great aerial activity x Saw 21 of ours together, they hovered overhead for some time & then broke into two squadrons & went over Hun lines under heavy fire x One squadron coming back lost a couple by Hun fire; one fell in flames; staggered at first then dived to earth x Had a long walk with J. Reid x Letters from EB & Jean Ingram; paper Harry Finney x Wrote Jean x

4/8/1917 Easter Sunday Glorious day; aeroplanes busy; [all day] their incessant hum being heard from early morning x Hun was particularly active; continually coming over our lines; the balloons were up & down at frequent intervals x Church in YMCA evening at de Seul, went with Pete x Wrote Mother & EB x Letter from Aunt Amy x America declared war x

- 4/9/1917 Bank Holiday Yesterday's glorious day gave way to sudden change, & we awoke this morning to the sound of driving rain x Showery all day; with occasional snow x In evening about 7 heavy fall of driving snow; got caught in it at Steenwerck without coat & had leaky boots x Very pleasant! Heavy bombardment direction Arras x
- 4/10/1917 Weather very changeable; rain 6.30; sunshine; snow showers; & at 4 heavy snow squall; with fine evening x Had walk with Joe & Reid x Wrote Aunt Amy x Good news from Arras; 8000 prisoners & between 40 & 50 guns x
- 4/11/1917 Rain, wind & snow x 13th played No 2 M G.C. football, & were beaten 8 - 3 x Continuation gun fire Arras x Papers from Kit x
- 4/12/1917 Little snow morning; rest day dull x Good victory at Arras, 11,000 prisoners, over 100 field guns & numerous smaller ones x Lecture at YMCA at de Seul by Chaplain BurrIDGE on Egypt; very interesting x
- 4/13/1917 Fine day, with exception light shower x Supposed to be moving out in few days x YMCA at Steenwerck night, good concert by Anti-aircraft general headquarters section x Papers from Kit x Wrote Miss White x
- 4/14/1917 Fine; papers from Kit x Concert in YMCA hut at de Seul evening with Reid & Joe x



- 4/15/1917 Year since landing at Marseilles x Raining all day x Wrote Daisy x Walk evening J Reid evening x Heavy bombardment on our front, said to be a blind for Fritz to bring back some troops supposed to have been sent to Arras x
- 4/16/1917 Huns raided last night; not much result x Inoculated x Wet afternoon & boisterous in evening x Rx shelled this morning Wrote Mother
- 4/17/1917 Boisterous day; hail & snow, squalls & fitful flashes sunshine x No one feeling too bright as result of yesterdays inoculation x Good news continues Arras front x French also started, 11,000 prisoners x Snow all evening x
- 4/18/1917 Snow all morning; rain following x I/c baths party x Good news French front x We are supposed to be moving out for training on Sunday x Letter Mother (Feb 26) x

4/19/1917 A sweet voiced blackbird awoke me this morning x Is spring really coming? Early morning fine but cloudy x Squadron of nine aeroplanes were manoeuvring almost directly overhead, & were having a great time looping the loop, dashing at one another, turning, diving, etc. it seemed in sheer exuberance of spirits after several days enforced idleness in the air x Later in morning rain x Letters from Mother (Feb 18) Twins, Eccus, Wop, Aunt Amy & E.B x Also parcel Auntie - cake, scarf, pen, soap, pencils, etc x Wrote EB, f.o.c. to Mother & Twinnies & pc to Eccus x

4/20/1917 Fine, & on warm side x We are moving out on Sunday x Going to St Omer for training x Being relieved by 310th Battery R P A, 25th Division x Paper Aunt Amy x As some of our batteries were being relieved they were shelled by the Huns x

4/21/1917 Fine x Preparations for moving off tomorrow morning x  
Several Hun 'planes over x Parcels from Kit (chocolate) &  
Ethel (choc, soap, toothpaste, face towels, toothbrush, &  
sardines x Just the parcel a chap wants for the trek tomorrow x  
Many thanks x Paper from Kit x Going to be rough house  
tonight judging from appearances at present (8.25 pm) x  
Reveille at 4 tomorrow x Sent Ethel p.c. ack. parcel x While  
walking in evening towards Neuve Eglise passed graveyard  
on roadside, in which were buried men of Strathcona's Light  
Horse, Canadian Infy, King Edwards L.H. Durham Light  
Infantry; some of them killed in Aug 1915 x Graves well  
looked after x

4/22/1917 Moved off at 7 & are going near St Omer for training x  
Reveille 4 am x Beautiful morning; clear blue sky; with  
enough "nip" in air to make it bracing x Plenty of Hun  
'planes about, & we were interested spectators of the work of  
the "Archies" x One Hun very persistent & moved about at his  
leisure x Trek very enjoyable x sp Nature asserting herself  
every side x Pastures deep green; hedges bursting bud x  
Noticed gardens: narcissus; a few primroses nestling among  
its mat of leaves; also young vegetables springing up x The  
day was one I would have liked to put in gardening x Passed  
thro' Merris Pradelle, Strazelle, Boerre, Hazebrouck (a good  
clean big city) & pulled up at a farmhouse between Hzbk &  
Ebblinghem at 3.30 (near Wallon-Cappel) EB's choc. etc very  
good x Billets good

4/23/1917 Reveille 3.30, moved off 6; beautiful spring morning x Passed thro' Ebbingham, Renescure, Arques, skirted St Omer, Wizernens, Hallines, Esquerdes, Setquedes, pulling up at Lumbres about 2 pm x Good trek; not feeling too good during day x Lumbres, at first sight looks clean town, with several pretty chateaus x A hill, covered with scrub is to the south x Gardens look pretty; saw violets & primroses x Walked into garden with violets & buried my nose in there x Our billet is next to the Gendarmerie Nationale x This afternoon went by myself into estaminet for coffee x Any pang? or burr? No mersieur; burr very [scarce], 5 frs x An old lady with white cap & a M'llse were there x Look very fatiguer messier? oui x I must have looked it with two days growth of beard, practically no sleep for 2 nights & just come in from 8 hrs trek x The old lady & daughter "parlewood", & then former came to me & in effect said she would give me bread & butter if I did not tell the my comrades, as if I did they all would want it x I "compreed" & had some x Old lady not a bad stick x M'llse tells me other N.Z. batteries bon; Australians

4/24/1917 Beautiful spring morning; just like Nelson x Hope it lasts x One of the mornings I like to be in my garden x Many of them in the village x Went down to station in evening x

4/25/1917 Overcast; shower evening x Had walk thro' village; nice looking church, decent shops & cafes x London papers come in evening at this place as we get them on day of publication x Wrote Mother, & f.s.c to Aunt Amy x Papers from Kit & Harry Finney & pr socks Aunt Amy x 1/2 holiday x football x

4/26/1917 Dull early part day; rest fine x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday; football x B team beat 12th Battery B team 11-0; A team were beaten by A ditto 40 - 0 x In evening walk round village with Snowy x Bought piece stake (sic) & had it cooked at an estaminet with addition of chips, coffee & bread x Red Cross train full of wounded & sick at station on way to somewhere x The 7 trains from Boulogne have a carriage full of nurses x Had a good squizz at them x

4/27/1917 Fine; tug-of-war evening won by B sub. In evening had feed 2 eggs, 3 bits bread & butter cup tea  $1\frac{1}{2}$  francs x Today was market day, & the village was full of people (mostly old women) doing their shopping; each one had basket over arm; good many had bunches of watercresses (sic) x Saw swallows for first time this season; they were darting about, no doubt looking up their old "homes".

4/28/1917 Still grand weather; very warm today x Parcel from Kit (sweets & tobacco) & paper Aunt Amy x Sent Kit f.s.c x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday; football tournament continued x 13th beat 11th by 6 - 4, after close & exciting game x Officers also played colonel's team winning after plenty of fun x ~~~ Note: our rations continued small; enough bread, but hardly any vegetables & no margarine at all x The horses have not been put on a full ration (12 lb) of oats x Should have been done when we came out of the Somme; if so horses would now have been fit for the coming "push" x

4/29/1917 Weather ditto x Section training x Wrote Mother, Blanche; & f.s.c. to Aunt Amy in reply to letter (13th) from latter x In evening watched several hundred new Portuguese troops march in x The poorest lot of men I have seen; they looked both mentally & physically weak; in fact many of them looked a few shingles short x God help us if we have to depend on the likes of these x Perhaps they may fight a little better than they look; hope so x The officers carried swords x Portuguese let down the Duke of Wellington in Peninsula Wars; don't wonder at it after seeing a sample of them x In morning stopped in an estaminet & wrote; m'dsllle gave me cup of coffee, "souvenir" x "Bercu [c'proundnce]" (sic) she said to me x

4/30/1917 Weather ditto x 1/2 holiday x 13th played 12th for final Rugby, & after great game won by 3 pts to nil x 13th only team in 3rd brigade not been beaten during tournament x Hot bath in evening

5/1/1917 Marie Hermant chez Mme Darsy Tauqun Routes l'Elnes L'umbres P. I - C. \_\_\_\_\_ Weather still glorious x Spent most of the day writing in the estaminet where "Marie" lives x Wrote to EB, & p.c's to Harry Finney, Pickles, Annie & Hall x Parcel from Hall, Noticed blossom in pear tree - first of the season x "Marie", a neat, civil & hard working M'llse, lives at the estaminet where I come to do my writing x She tells me I have "bercu [c'pridence]" x

5/2/1917 Weather still good x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday; cross country race for 13th x  
In evening watched some Portuguese troops playing football  
with some French Kiddies x One of the Portuguese a bit rough  
with the Kiddies; so too two or three of our chaps joined in x  
But an old Frenchman who was watching became very  
excited, & stopped the boys x Afterwards we found out that he  
was frightened our chaps & the Portuguese would commence  
"scrapping" x In all probability the old chap was right x Note:  
our rations are improving; had butter today - first time for  
nearly 2 weeks x Also getting vegetables + + both dry & fresh  
(onions, carrots) x Ample supply of bread, cheese & jam x  
Food is dear in town, e.g., 2 eggs, cup tea, 2 bits bread &  
butter  $1\frac{1}{2}$  frs; wine 5d large glass x Potatoes very scarce x  
Horses have also been put on full oat ration (12 lbs daily)  
instead of 9 lbs x

5/3/1917 Weather ditto x Spent most of morning in estaminet "in the  
corner" writing letters x Wrote to Kit and Pickles x  
Afternoon easy x Final road race in evening, 12th battery  
man coming in first x The 13th had about 8 men in the first  
dozen x 25 should have started from each battery, but owing  
to mix up one of our men did not run & so we lost a good  
many points x As usual met the 7.15 train from Boulogne x



5/4/1917 up at 4.30 to be inspected by General [Plumer] x Beautiful morning, I heard the notes of a cuckoo for the first time this season x The weather continues warm; hard to think that about fortnight ago we were experiencing snow weather x Seem to have jumped at one bound right from winter into summer x Sports in afternoon; concert in evening at General headquarters I presentation of prizes by Colonel Standish x 12 Battery won cup for most points in comptns during week x Train in evening; saw some more nurses x Weather ditto x Moving out on Sunday x Sent f.s.c. to Mother x

5/5/1917 Still fine x Preparing for moving off tomorrow x Pay day; drew 40 frs x Look round village evening x

5/6/1917 Left Lumbres at 8 am x Took same route as coming, & occupied same billets at Wallon Cappel x High wind in our face all the way; very dusty, but otherwise weather good x Reached billet about 4 pm x Can hear the guns once more x Everyone sorry to leave Lumbres x Perfect weather; & stay was more in nature of holiday than anything else x Horses picked up immensely x It is the best village the artillery have been yet camped in x Quite like being back to civilisation x Clean streets, good estaminets & shops, some [fine] private residences ; everything points to place being prosperous little one x Am told population 2000, with 60 estaminets; all latter tiled floor & generally spotlessly clean x Saw the train come in every evening; quite a little break in the monotony of things; usually three came in between 7 & 7.30; the last one bringing English papers x Big run on the French Paris ones by inhabitants x Felt as if we have been holiday making; & have come to the end of them x Adieu Lumbres! I'll often think of your [trím] little gardens, nice Kiddies, & beautiful weather!

5/7/1917 Moved off at 8 in beautiful weather x Same route as coming x Pulled up at 2.30 at a place between Douliu & Steenwerck x Dinner in a wayside field x Soon came within sound of firing & also anti-aircraft x Early in evening terrific bombardment along wide extent of front commenced & lasted several hours x Fritz was sending over at one particular spot & a barrage of shrapnel - about 8.30 this [roar] & we could see bursts - too quick for them to be counted x Walked to Steenwerck & bought tea cover for Mrs Thornton x Billeted in barn, I struck the only bedstead x Here for only a day or two; Rx going into action this evening x Slight shower evening - first since we left over a fortnight ago x Noticed great increase in growth of everything; trees now in blossom & trees in leaf; buttercups and daisies in fields x

5/8/1917 Rain during night, & this morning; will do a lot of good x Letters from Mother (March 6 - 13) Kit, Pickles, Maurice, Koi, Matia, Ray, Putty & Uncle (12/15/17) Geo, Miss White; Annie (3.6.17) One of Mother's letters, I think, has still to come x Steenwerck evening; bought scarf (sic) for Pickles; posted parcel to Mrs Thornton x Fair amount firing

5/9/1917 Lovely fine day x Wrote to Mother & Annie; p.c's to Hall, Howie; Twinnies, Bry Bassett, Billy Simpson, Putty; sent parcel to Pickles x Intermittent firing x The gun position we were to have taken over was found occupied by a Tommy battery x A mess- up somewhere x P.C' to EB, Boy & Bryan Brie; letter to Putty x

5/10/1917 Warm day x Rx went into action near old position x We are firing only in SOS at present x Early this morning Hun planes came over our W.L., flying rather low; hot shelling x Sent f.s.c. to Uncle Geo x Very little firing x The old people at our billet have stopped us from getting water at the pump /-/ says it is getting short x [Rats] x The people next door make no objection, so we obtain it there x So we have 'tabooed' the place & get no more coffee x Some of the "Frenchies" are the limit! & will not give us any consideration at all; whereas others seem to welcome us x In the fields about here I have seen old men & women harnessed to rollers rolling the ground x

5/11/1917 Warm spell continues x Paper from Aunt Amy x Sent p.c's to EB. Bryan Brie & Boy x C X & L X guns went into action x These nice evenings I come out in the grass paddock at the back of the billet & sit under a tree & read & write x Jolly pleasant x very little firing x

5/12/1917 Heat quite trying x Working party of 25 men went forward x Aeroplanes active all day; "archies" going continuously x Not much artillery fire x

5/13/1917 Very warm; 1/2 holiday; slept x As usual sitting under tree in "orchard" x Numerous aeroplanes of ours over Hun lines, & are being shelled every now & then x Fritz is sending "heavies" over in direction of Sailly x Intensive bombardment in direction Arras; above the continual rumble, every now & then will break sharp upon it sound of an extra "heavy" x Quiet still evening; birds singing, & all that sort of thing! Too warm, so took off undershirt x Am reading "Moonbeams from the Larger Lunacy" (Stephen Leacock); very humorous x Issued with the real war bread today; brown in colour; taste very little difference; little moister if anything x P.C. to Miss White x Letter EB (I-I10) x (possibly shorthand) Heard later that Fritz was shelling Steenwerck station & dump along side our last W.L.

5/14/1917 Heavy showers during night; very welcome to farmers x Still heavy firing direction Arras most of day x Large number of our aeroplanes busy in evening, which is still & fine x Wrote Mother x

5/15/1917 Change in weather; misty during part of morning x Two of our planes, apparently having lost their way, came over our billet flying very low & landed in paddock x In one of the machines we could see one of the chaps standing up in his "car" as if looking for a place to land x 11th Battery came into our lines x Lot of troops coming into district, in ready for push x Went to Steenwerck in evening x

5/16/1917 Showery x Letter from Aunt Amy (11/15/17); ack. same by f.s.c x also ack parcel from Auckland Patriotic Assn x

5/17/1917 Letters from Mother (21 - 27 March) Koi (& photo of Twinnies) Pickles, Aunt Kate, Blanche, & Miss Gunn x Dull & overcast x Went to Doullieu (sic) in evening with Athol Whitwell; full of Australian troops; some from Bullecourt; tell stories of hand fighting; tanks said to be not so much of a success x

5/18/1917 Fine x Sent letter to Harry Finney & p.c's to Aunt Amy, Blanche & Twinnies x In evening a Hun airman made a dash at one of our observation balloons; but after firing a few rounds, he cleared away to his lines, under "archie" fire x He was flying very low when we last saw him x He was hovering over vicinity of balloon for some mins. before making the attack, & it is said that he was flying our colours x The observers jumped out in their parachutes & appeared to land safely x Within half - an hour the balloon, which did not descend for some time after the attack, was again on duty x None of the other six or seven balloons in the vicinity took any notice, & "carried on" x Large number of our machines patrolling during evening x

5/19/1917 Fine x Douliou with Athol Whitwell in evening x Crowoulds of Australians including 4th Divsn who are said to have been badly cut up at Bullecourt x Went off fodder room on to lines x

5/20/1917 Warm day; went for ride in morning x A church service for Australians was being held in an orchard knee deep in lovely grass; table for chaplain covered with Union Jack on which were several bottles of spring flowers x Men in Khaki formed round table x Very pretty scene; bright colours of flag & flowers pretty contrast with green grass x Got very thirsty on ride (with Porter) but failed to get a drink at several farmhouses; rather an unusual thing in France x Great usual aerial activity on our part x Wrote EB x I/c horse picquet x

5/21/1917 Fine; grazing morning; saw 3rd Division Australians on march x Sent diary & letter to Annie by chaps going on leave x Moving W.L. tomorrow x Heavy bombardment during night direction Arras x Colonist & Summary Harry Finney x



5/22/1917 Rain during night & most of forenoon x Moved off to new W.L. at Nieppe x taking over from 27th Aus battery Only bare number of horses & men for wagons came; remainder men & horses going elsewhere - believe arrangement only temporary x When we arrived at W.L. Australians found not to be going out till tomorrow x Seem to be another mess - up, as we could easily have remained at old W.L. until tomorrow x Our aeroplanes patrolling in front of our balloons all day; Fritz gives them shells regularly x A balloon is just a few hundred yds from us x Took over from 27th Aus. battery 3rd Division x

5/23/1917 Fine x Slept alongside drain, with an overhead covering x During night one of our aeroplanes came past with bright lights burning x Rather an uncanny sight to see the lights dart glowing thro' space; accompanied by whirr of motor x Easy day x Wrote Mother x Watched balloon "up the road" come down x Big tangle of ropes x (Method of running the balloon to it's shed: sand bags, etc) x

5/24/1917 Fine x Parcel from Aunt Amy; ack. same x Great aerial activity on our part x In evening six of ours must have [expected] Fritz x They were manoeuvring in position for the best part of an hour; several times coming under extremely heavy shell fire x Then they would come out of range & hover about for a bit, & then off to Fritz again x Later in evening a solitary Hun sailed over our lines in leisurely manner, until the firing became too hot x One of our machines patrolling the balloon near our lines was followed Fritz on a parallel line but at much lower height x Every now & then he would put his machine gun onto the enemy; we could see the flash & "spurt" of the bullets as they left the gun x This machine was about 3000 ft up; Fritz 9 or 10 x

5/25/1917 Fine & warm x P.C. from EB; wrote EB. Fritz has been getting on to our pits & vicinity x Today he hit a house full of 18 pdr amtn: it is still going off! (about 10,000 rounds) x also hit a disused pit not now in use x Our aeroplanes active as usual x O.C. made a major x I should be going on leave in 8 or 9 days, providing it is not stopped x Indications point to "push" in this vicinity coming shortly x

5/26/1917 Birth of Queen Mary - God save the Queen! Fine x Went to dentists in afternoon & made apptmt for Monday x A couple of Fritz airmen come over the first for several days x I/c horse picquet x Paper from Aunt Amy x

5/27/1917 Awakened 3 am by gas alarm x Wind highly dangerous; sirens blowing & bells ringing x Gas did not reach us x Enemy aeroplanes ' visits becoming more frequent x A good deal of mutual big gun fire going on x Saw one of our amntrn dumps go up; concussion made our bivvy creak, & saw flash & huge volume of thick black smoke followed x Our wagons which went up to gun position evening had merry time; guns were being heavily shelled when they arrived & matters were a little exciting for time being x After darkness good display fireworks! Aeroplanes going thro' space; Fritz sent up some big flares /- / big ball of fire, & hung suspended in air for quite long time; also string of lights, four or five at a time following each other in rapid succession x Enemy long range gun ranging on one of our balloons; got rather close x The observers came down in parachutes, but the balloon remained up for quite another hour x Fine & warm x

5/28/1917 Fine & warm x Went to dentist at Steenwerck & had tooth stopped x Heard of a bit of quick road making x Some heavy guns had to get in position in Ploegsteert /-/ no metalled road for caterpillar x Thirty motor lorries full of metal were obtained; as they emptied metal a road roller followed, & in about 3 hrs (according to my informant) over a mile of road was formed & the heavies were then able to get to their "possey" x Won 25Fr at 2-up ----- // ----- "A" Battery, 155th Bgde (?) R.F.A. are camped in the same paddock as we are /- / or rather have their W.L.

5/29/1917 Dull & fine x Sent f.s.c. to Mother x Intense bombardment for short time during night x Still lively at our guns x -----  
// ----- Tanks: From what I have heard from chaps who were there, Arras battle Tanks except for the first day, have not been the success they formerly were x the Huns are said to have dug pit for theirs under the barbed wire, & also had guns in their front line to knock them out x On one occasion it is related several tanks were to have supported Aust. Infy in an attack, but only one arrived, rest having missed their way x I should fancy there is some truth in the statements, as newspaper reports have little mention of them x

5/30/1917 Fine & dull x Slouch hats & bandoliers called in; now have to wear our tin hats!; sure sign that soon something will be "doing" Quiet day x Unfavourable conditions for air reconnaissance

5/31/1917 Fine x In evening took ammunition to gun position at Romain (?) x Guns everywhere; all calibres x (sic) Great deal traffic on roads x Our position has been severely shelled x The guns are just inside a hedge along which a road runs x While coming back (about 9.15) a Hun aeroplane attacked & burnt the balloon near our W.L x The same one, or rather the same section as was burnt in March x Of a sudden heavy "archie" fire & on looking up saw Hun close to balloon; as he passed he fired a volley; turned & came again & did ditto; and yet again x The balloon was now alight & quickly burned & Fritz made for home amid a torrent of shells & machine gun bullets x Could see the flash of his [quick-quarter] as he used it x Very daring, & he took big risk x Usually we have several machines patrolling; but evidently Fritz was awaiting a favourable opportunity, as the sky was clear of ours when he come over x He chose his time well - just dusk, and was close to balloon before the "antis" opened on him x On way up to guns saw armoured engine drawing ammunition x Great system light railways running right past some gun pits x Dumps going up nearly every day x

6/1/1917 The balloon destroyed last night was replaced today by another x Two of our chaps Mc Causland & Reading were wounded at guns today x Wrote Mother x (A balloon costs about £700) x A dump went up at New Eglise (?) today; said to have been 160 casualties x

6/2/1917 Shifted guns to prepared positions on Hill 63, in readiness for attack on Messines x Letters from Uncle Geo (28/5/17) & B.C, & paper Aunt Amy x I/c horse line picquet x "Heavies" fairly active x The "possy" / we / (sic) evacuated tonight was well shelled during day x Dr Marshall said to be badly wounded x Fine x

6/3/1917 Birth of King George V God Save the King! Church service at Church Army hut evening x Another attack on our balloon this evening x Soon after nine, when our patrolling 'planes had gone home, a Hun suddenly appeared, and commenced spitting bullets when some distance from balloon, all time approaching rapidly x Exit the two observers x Archie's opened & put barrage round balloon x Fritz did not wait to make second attempt but went home in the moonlight x Observers landed at La Bizet x Was near their camp when they came in, & were loudly cheered x One of them was "up" for the [x] first time x Good deal of artillery firing x One of our men Bomb. Wallis got "backsheesh" in leg x Received parcel from Miss D Bayley, Okoroire, Waikato this aftn Women's Pat. League x Thanks x Ack same x

6/4/1917 Gas alarm about 3 am x At reveille (5.30) very strong smell tear gas; made us weep a little x Hot time on our front during night, Fritz putting over "stuff" "all the time", including tear & gas shells x Chaps had masks on for several hours x During day our gun position heavily shelled x While a number of our chaps were sheltering in a trench a shell landed there killing outright Fred Cruickshanks, wounding Bomb. Miller, & "shocking" two or three others x "Cruicky" was a very fine chap x During night a 'plane, painted black & said to be one of ours, landed near guns x It was reckoned that a Hun [--] spy came over in it, & later in day an alleged spy was apprehended by Joe Bristow x During day, Hun busy shelling Armentieres when he set fire to a factory near railway station) and railway station Ballieul; also roads x We Our big guns also busy x Met Bill Switzer evening x The balloon had 38 bullet holes in it x

6/5/1917 Fine x During afternoon gun fire from our side became greatly intensified & as night wore on even more so x The horizon was so heavy with smoke; and the moon rose full & red x One of our heavies close by makes a noise like several railway trains tearing along x Fritz was also doing a bit of long range firing x Several of his planes come over x Rather quiet day for aeroplanes x Pay day; drew 20 frs x ----- // -  
----- Talking to old lady in coffee house: when Allemand came did they treat you all right x "No, took things; no pay for them x "Officers ? ugh! the said the old man making a gesture of stooping below a fence so as not to see the men thieving x "Plenty zig-zag" said the old lady shutting her eyes & snoring loudly indicating that Allemand plenty drunk & sleeping off effects x



6/6/1917 Fine but dull x Three of our men wounded today /-/ Beau badly at the guns; Joe Stewart, also badly & Bevan x Joe was coming along Niéppe road from the baths, when shell struck building alongside of the party, Joe getting it in the back, also Bevan x Huns shelling Niéppe all day; this evening saw a number of refugees about our camp waiting to return to their homes when firing ceases x Rather sad sight old man & woman & youngster x Big fire vicinity Armentières x Letter from E.B; ack same x Few slight showers evening & several peals thunder x Hope to get leave within a week x Beau has since died of wounds x Tried to get news of Joe, but he has been sent away from the Hospital where he was first taken x

6/7/1917 At 3 oclock this morning terrific bombardment commenced, lasting for some time under cover of which our infantry (N.Z.) advanced & took Messines x Just before 3 am one of our aeroplanes came from direction of front line & suddenly showed three lights x Immediately two big guns boomed out almost simultaneously followed directly by hundreds of our guns & huge explosion x Shook the earth x A fair number of prisoners have been taken so far; saw a few of them x very little firing; a stunt rest of day until afternoon & evening x Letters from Mother (April 3) Kit, Ray (2) Effie, Miss Burke, Miss Young, Mrs Angus, Una Garlick, Miss Gunn, Aunt Kate & Huí Harrison x Bonsoí!

6/8/1917 Intense firing still going on x News from front lines indicates that things are going well for us x Good number prisoners x It is related that a batch of Hun prisoners captured by our boys were kept with their captors, made to advance with them & help to dig in! One of our chaps who went over with one of the waves of infantry came across some Huns in dug out; they threw up hands & said "We no shoot" x Armed only with a spade our chap smacked one over the head shifting his helmet first so as to get a better crack at him! Towards evening firing became even hotter & it is said the Germans are counter-attacking x Horizon just a mass of shooting flames x Dozens of our aeroplanes, but [some] of Huns [--- ---] x Our guns (13th) fired between 1000 & 1300 rounds yesterday x Letter from Uncle Geo x Wrote Eccus x

6/9/1917 Fine x Very little firing during day x

6/10/1917 This morning came up with a working party to build pits at Messines for guns to move forward x Am now waiting on hill to go forward & commence x (am going on leave on 13th) x The hill has been well shelled, trees shattered & branches everywhere x But Wood not nothing like devastation of for instance Delville or Mametz Wood x Fritz is now sending a few over which are bursting a little distance away x Later (under Messines Ridge) x We are now digging gun pits under Messines Ridge just in front of what were our second line trenches x The Huns trenches first line were just over crest of Ridge & ours were in some [---] not more than 80 yds x At this particular spot however they were further apart & Fritz looked down on them! from that eminence, & could plainly see all our movements, Hence the necessity for driving him out x

6/11/1917 As showing accuracy of our artillery fire the hill down to Fritz [good long trench] is simply ploughed up & shattered beyond description, while just below is green grass which apparently has not been touched x Messines itself simply doesn't exist x A post pillar or two of what was the Institute is standing x Right along the hill is desolation pure & simple x We had to scurry for shelter several times during day, & on occasion as shells came over & we had to put on our respirators; several of chaps sea sick afterwards x Fritz sends them over in a weak shell case, which bursts & sends out the fumes in clouds & along the rotten stuff [fumes] x He put several over about every hour x While sitting in our pit having tea nibbling with an "army cake" & wondering when I would be in Blighty, slap, bang, crash came three right among us before we could move x Oh crikey x Worked until about midnight x A terrific bombardment began x We were right in front of most of guns & got full benefit x Fritz also replied briskly x We could not hear each other speak so loud was noise; only advantage we could not hear / Hun shells falling near us! Men's nerves were never made to stand such

6/12/1917 Shifted W.L to Neuve Eglise in open paddock x Going hard all day guiding up the wagons x Heavy thunder & rain storm soon after arriving, a flash of lightening killed Capt Primmer 7th Battery (vet) & injured several others; only about 20 yds from where we were x Huns shelled Bailleul Sid & dump also about the lines [and left their marking] the shell striking farm house & killing old woman & baby and two kiddies; who [were got out [Ditto] the noise] x Shell of Bailleul road caught two lorries Finish lorries x x In another big shell hole saw a dead fowl x Went to Reinforcement Camp [-----] to [-----] leave x Hurrah! Hurrah! x Bill Milne killed in our pit today x)

6/13/1917 Just before time for train leaving for Boulogne received notice that leave cancelled until further notice. Damn!!! Returned to Westhof Farm, where immobile section battery in camp x In evening went to Bailleul & saw Joe in L.C.C.S. x Looking pretty good, but piece of haveE. shell in his chest x Spoke to some of the nurses - the first girls of my own lingo I have spoken to for about 10 months x Corporal Bond was killed in 7 gun pit this morning & two other chaps wounded x Shell exploded near pit & knocked it in x Shells fell near Reinforcement Camp this morning x On way to [Restlines] saw remains of a train which Fritz had shelled x Finish train! Note from Annie advising two parcels coming x While in Bailleul saw a number of whiz-bang trench mortars & machine guns captured from Germans by Australian Infantry

6/14/1917 Should have gone on leave this morning, but owing to the blunder of some idiot my warrant which had gone to general headquarters for alteration, did not come back in time for me to catch today's boat x Strafe it x Went to Reinforcement Camp & hope to get away tomorrow

6/15/1917 (on Train on way to Boulogne) Left Steenwerck at 3 for Blighty, via Boulogne x Among my papers was one declaring, that I was "free from scabies & disease" x very nice, thank you x Name & destination noted in book at Reinforcement Camp; marched to station & tickets examined by military policeman, Passed thro Bailleul (saw Hun prisoners) Strazelle (when a few R. D. F. came on to next station (Hazebrouck) x Boulogne arrived 9 pm; country looking very fine x we were marched to billets; where everything had been done for the convenience of soldiers: canteen, hot Turkish baths & warm showers; boat cruises at our disposal; plenty of blankets x Slept in a big bldg; had good sleep; got to bed about midnight x Fine day x



6/16/1917 (Fair: waiting in billet yard at Boulogne to fall in to march to steamer) Nice cool morning x Had good sleep in spite of hard floor; but have had worse ones x Had Turkish bath & shower before breakfast; bon! Feel much lighter in consequence x Sat on a hot pipe, but really didn't mind, as nothing matters now for the next ten days x Big crowd waiting from men different regiments x (on train to London) Good trip 1.30mins across [---] plenty of older boats & destroyers dodging about; 2 hrs wait at Folkestone for train, had beer & pie x Sent telegram to Uncle Geo & ER x Arrived Waterloo 6.15; met by N.C.S.C. officer & taken to club in [---] having good look London on way x Had bath Had couple drinks with some Scotties; tried to get taxi for Liverpool. Station; no good x Stopped at N. Z. Club for night & not much sleep x

6/17/1917 At 7. am set out from Liverpool Station for Ilford x Train or cab unobtainable; rather too early in morning for small place like London! Walked all way to L.S; interesting walk; saw many streets & places I had read about x Got to Ilford 8.30; no conveyances about; still too early! Walked to Annie's & warmly welcomed x In afternoon went with Annie & Keith to Guy's Hospital to see Norah; then on to Mrs Green's had tea; back to Ilford; saw visiting another Mrs Green, & back home to supper x Salad, gooseberries, custard w for meal; just the food I longed for x Had jolly pleasant day x Hottest day in London this summer x [Zeph] race in Kent yesterday x We passed over London Bdge; saw tower, etc

6/18/1917 Very warm x In morning went for walk with Annie & Desmond in park x Went to town met EB & went to Suzette[e] (sic) at Globe Theatre x Very good x Passed over Westminster Bridge by House Commons x Went out to Walton & back to London & then to Ilford x

6/19/1917 Most interesting day; thanks to Annie x Went to London morning & sightseeing all day x Went over St Paul's (Nelson) & Tower of London morning, luncheon, & then over West- minster Abbey (after sitting out a portion of a service being held x Went to 10 Downing St (not by invitation!) & saw Miss Lloyd George & her "soldier man" return from being married x Saw Lloyd Geo & Mrs ditto, & the crowd led by Annie, gave him cheers x & 10 Downing St shabby-looking 3-storied building with not slightest pretension to architectural beauty, down a side street x Walls cracked; pane of glass out of front window; window sills need painting badly - bottom story windows swt green blinds only; next blinds & small curtain next green blinds x In front of residence a shabby looking lamp x Bonar Law's dug-out next door, part of the same bldg, & similar in appearance x Foreign Office op; fine building x Went over lot of London on top buses x Saw Mansion House (with pane of glass missing from a window) & Bank of Eng (one-storied drab looking place) x Down Fleet St, Strand etc, etc x Jolly fine & interesting day x Felt a thrill go thro' me as I stood before

6/20/1917 Left Euston 12.5 for Llandudno arriving latter at 7.30; met by Uncle x Passed thro' Rugby, Crewe, Chester; at latter place heavy rain to end of journey x Very pretty rural scenery x Posted letter to Mother at Euston x Both Aunty & Uncle looking well x Letter from Daisy x

6/21/1917 Fine day x In morning went with Uncle to Colwyn Bay per 'bus x Very pretty & enjoyable trip x In afternoon, with Uncle & Aunty, [-----] for drive round the Great Orme Grand view x In evening went to Gardens; & then concert on [Purn], jolly good day x Sent Mother & Anne a p.c x

6/22/1917 Fine; went on pier & listened to concert x Left at 3.10 arriving Euston 10 to 7, Ranelagh 11.15 x Good trip down x I prefer English rural scenes to French; English hedges & clean - looking houses, trees, lanes, etc, very pretty setting x

6/23/1917 Went to London morning; visited club x Afternoon went to Walton & spent few hours with EB. At Walton Station a gentlemen offered me a ride up to the Hospital x He was Mr Houldsworth, Union S-S. Coy, and knew Willie! x Saw him last at a conference x Gave me a pkt of green cigs x Good chap x Passing cemetery at Walton noticed grave of Tom Hudson (son M.P. Motueka) x more:- Jabez Balfour of Liberals [frauds fame], was once interested in Ilford, & built erected several buildings x

6/24/1917 morning went round London with Bert x Ilford to Fenchurch St, then 'bussed thro Strand, Fleet St, Cannon- St, passed St James' Park to Buckingham Palace x Royal Ensign flying x Then on to Hyde Park & Rotten Row. The "aristocracy" riding in the Row & the crowd watching them, reminds me of a circus parade! The Row is a track partitioned off by fence from Park; the riders canter or trot up one side & walk down the other x Most of women "straddle-legs" & great "cuts" some of them looked x Great number of Officers in Park x Passed thro' Park; number of chaps spouting & arguing x "Christian Evidence Society;" one chap was speaking of Christianity, & was to be replied to by an atheist x Didn't have time to hear both sides x Passed under Marble Arch fe Duke of Wellington's statue, & Wellington House then took underground to Livpl St; home 2 x Wrote Mother afternoon x Evening visited Mrs Green x The walk thro London very enjoyable x Spuds growing in gardens front Buckingham Palace x

6/25/1917 A grand day for the last x With Annie went to Whiteley's Store, Madam Tassads (sic), Kensington Park, Albert Memorial (best I have seen in London) Imperial Institute with it's wonderful collection of Indian work, including Royal presents given during King's visit when Duke of Cornwall x Each part of Empire has exhibit, & makes me realise the immensity of it x With Bert & his brother & the Annie & Mrs Agnes Green had dinner at Lyons & then Wyndham Theatre to see Pride of London with Mr Brough & Gerald du Maurier x Very fine x One scene in dug out in France one of the chaps said only thing to do out here was to make a "shabby of his recollections" Left the party at tube & got to Club, where met Nick Poole & Donovan x Wrote a note to Annie, sent telegrams to Uncle Geo & Etc Bought at Whiteleys 3 pkt editions; Sam Weller, Adonais (Shelley) & Nature Thoughts (Whitman) x

6/26/1917 Left Victoria St Station about 9 am & Folkestone noon x Good run across x Marched to Camp on Hill x Canadian orchestra gave concert YMCA Hut lounge x Camp well arranged x Reveille midnight, breakfast 12.30, marched off 2.10, left by train 4, reached Steenwerck station 11 x Went to Battery W.L. near Nieppe, not far from previous W.L

6/27/1917 Arrived camp before midday x Found letters from Mother (Apl 18-23) Twinnies Pickles, Miss Thornton, Bry Bassett, Jean Ingram, Aunt Amy & papers from Miss Garlick, Harry Finney & Kit x Ack all by p.c. On way Steenwerck evening met Joe Dickson & Henry Wilson) While away, several of our balloons were burnt; also a large number of Huns x While attacking one near our W.L. the anti-aircraft at Steenwerck brought down a Hun aeroplane, & it fell near our lines x The chaps rushed the spot & quickly tore the plane to pieces for souvenirs x Some of the chaps even went so far as to take souvenirs off the two wounded men, one of whom died later x The other had both legs broken, besides other injuries x An order came out & few days later making drastic regulations regarding enemy machines which fell in our lines; anyone being found with souvenirs to be Court martialed x (sic) Abernathy, of the Staff, died of wounds received at Le Bizet x

6/28/1917 Rain all night; fine but dull day x Routine x Fritz firing at balloon at intervals; observers descended in parachutes x Also sent few shells round about our lines x Heavy bombardment commenced towards the north at about 7 pm x Rain in the evening x Wrote to Jean Ingram & com. letter to Mother x Later in evening very violent thunderstorm & vivid lightening x The balloon, which had not yet descended was struck by lightening & destroyed x Lightening must have struck steel hawser x It came down slowly flapping in the light breeze & looked just like huge jelly fish as it wobbled here & there x What the Hun failed to do the electric disturbance achieved x Very heavy rain accompanied storm x Wrote Annie

6/29/1917 Fine x Wrote Mother [describing] my holiday up to Lily & Geo's wedding x Next letter will commence from the abbey x Dull but fine x

6/30/1917 Sharp stunt during evening x Rain all morning; 1/2 holiday afternoon x More rain evening x Wrote Joe x L X gun came out, re-reminder tomorrow x Orders at present are we are to go back to Westhof Farm x Read At the Gate of the Desert (Oxenham); not much x Commenced Paul Kelter (Jerome); rather liked it x



7/1/1917 Dull & on cool side Heavy stunt in night, & fairly persistent artillery activity all day in direction Armentières x Letter from Annie x Wrote Aunt & Uncle x We are moving out tomorrow to Westhof Farm x Wrote Joe Stewart

7/2/1917 Moved off at 11, & were at Westhof Farm 1 hr later x Most of Division are here, & it is said we are to be reserve Division for a week or two x We are now out of action x Fine sunny day x Paper (Aklnd Weekly) from Mother x Large number of balloons up; a Hun or two came over our lines x Again shelled balloon & observers dropped "overboard" x

7/3/1917 Fine x During night Hun 'planes came over, & caused a little excitement x Some bombs were dropped, but not near our lines x This morning, near Bailleul, & not far from us, we suddenly heard rattle machine gun in sky & next instant down came a Hun x The machine turned on its nose & came to earth in corkscrew fashion, turning round & round x The victor hovered over his victim like some great bird of prey, ready to finish off his captor if he showed signs of recovering himself x How he swooped & dived! The rays of sun caught falling machine, & wings showed up like silver x Glad I wasn't in it x Sent p.c.'s to sister, Eccus, WW Snodgrass, Billy Simpson, Nell, Daisy & Hui Harrison x

7/4/1917 Showers morning rest day dull but fine x Letters from Joe x Wrote to Joe x I/c gun park guard x In afternoon helping to fix up sports ground x

7/5/1917 Fine but dull & air much cooler x Sports all day; donkey steeplechase very funny x In morning a N.Z. airman flew over our camp in a tri-plane & gave a great exhibition of flying; corkscrewing until close to earth, then next moment soaring upwards; he would sail along just skimming top of tents, & do all sort of strange antics x As a chap remarked "The bally birds ought to be ashamed of themselves!" In evening watched dozens of 'planes returning to Bailleul 'drome & before going to roost most of them gave us a "show" x Thousands of feet up they would corkscrew; reversing by way of change, & just as we thought they would dash to ground up serenely again they would go x

7/6/1917 Fine x Inspection by new O.C. (Lt.-Col. Falla) x Two or three Hun planes came over x Pay day; drew 20 frcs x Concert in evening x The YMCA have two large Marquees for our use /-/ one for officers & one for men x Note: our rations have been on the lean side lately & the cooking not too good x At dinner time today we refused to eat the stew until the O. O. had a look at it x Expect there will be a change of cooks now!

- 7/7/1917 Fine x Divisiónál Sports x Letters from Mother (Apl 30) Ray, Effie, Kit & Twinnies & Harry Finney; paper Aunt y x Two or tree Hun 'planes over x Met Les Hair & had good yarn x Wrote Mother; detailing my leave trip up to & including 23 June (Saturday) x The Russians have commenced another offensive x
- 7/8/1917 Church parade morning; band in attendance: Text "Greater Love hath no Man" etc; very short x Divisiónál sport rest of day x During night terrific thunderstorm, with heavy rain & remarkable vivid lightening flashes, making night as plain as day x Never experienced anything approaching it before x Tent a bit leaky; but it might have been worse! Letter from Aunt Amy x Centre X went into action rather unexpectedly x At former position in Ploegsteert x
- 7/9/1917 Fine but dull x Put in for week c/c stables x Wrote Twinnies x R & L X guns went into action x Paper "(Mail)" from Mother x
- 7/10/1917 Fine; weather still on cool side x Football match evening 1st & 3rd Brigade; 3rd won 3 - 0 x Not much of game x Met quite crowd Nelson chaps - Lemmer, Switzer, Stratton & Fanzelow, & had a yarn x ----- Since we kicked up a shindy tother day, our rations have considerably improved x Nothing like a "slathering up" occasionally x

7/11/1917 Fine;  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday x Taking advantage of the clouds a Fritz airmen made a dash at our balloons & set fire to three of them x Then he sailed away like blazes x Wrote Annie x x x x Am reading for second time "The Amateur Gentleman" x Heard lot of cheering; it is said that the King passed thro' today x

7/12/1917 very warm day x We are moving back to W.L. at Nieppe tomorrow morning x Lots of chaps are reckoning that the war will be over by Xmas - and are taking bets on it x

7/13/1917 Orders for moving today cancelled until tomorrow x Fine day

7/14/1917 Moved to old W.L. (Wagon Lines) this morning x About 8 am violent thunderstorm & vivid lightening x Fine on start trek x In evening Hun aeroplane made dash at a balloon but he turned & fled when close on a/c "antis" x Lately Hun airmen have come over the vicinity of our lines at night repeatedly on bomb-dropping excursions x Early this morning, hearing violent anti-aircraft firing & feeling the earth shake as a bomb exploded, I got up & had a look at things x Could hear the whirr of Hun engines, & see the darkness being pierced by little flashes as shells exploded x Several searchlights x x Long streaks of light shooting across heaven at end of which a big silver disc; This felt & searched the sky for raiders x now going Like some huge tentacle the light went backwards & forwards ever searching & feeling for enemy x One moment dead pause or if quarry found; then would creep backward, now thrust forward, one minuteto right & then to left x Crash would fall bomb; out would bark the archies, and spit machine guns x Then noise of engines recede; to come again some mins later; & ditto repeats! Several of our own machines in light [burning] were

7/15/1917 Rain during night; but fine all day x Service in Church Hut evening x Parcel (& note enclosed) from Mother (cocoa & bovril, sweets & o tobacco) x Good x Paper from Aunt Amy

7/16/1917 Fine x Large number of our balloons (22) in sight x Patches of clouds in afternoon, & Fritz took advantage of these good conditions to have a shot at our balloons x About 4 the one near our W.L. was attacked, the airman darting suddenly down from above a cloud x Our anti's got on to him immediately & appeared to get him hustled x He was flying low & put a few rounds into the balloon without effect; then he shot off in direction of other balloons, but not with no success beyond forcing several observers to jump out in their parachutes x One landed alongside our lines, none the worse x Later in afternoon another Hun dived among several of the balloons & set one on fire x Seven or eight observers jumped overboard x Every day Fritz has shot at balloons with his long range gun x Wrote Mother, detailing my trip up to lunchtime on Monday (25th) x

7/17/1917 Warm day x In evening went for swim in canal x Letter from Annie x Did not know until this evening, when I saw our guns at work, that we used guns against Hun balloons x

7/18/1917 Letters from Mother (May 15 - 20) Kit, Aunty, Pickles, Mrs Ambridge, & Joe (2) & photos x Parcel from Annie (cake, apples, Brazil nuts, & sweets - good O!) x Rain showers most of day x Wrote Annie & p.c. to Joe x In evening went i/c 6 horse team to move "D" gun to new position x Got home about midnight; good deal of rain & returned more or less wet x Roads full of shell holes & took a bit of good driving to get thro' x D in the direction of N. heavy stunt; could hear nothing, on a/c strong wind; but for miles along the front the cloudy horizon was just one long quivering line of flame x Occasionally a deeper glow would show up behind the clouds, as an extra big bust or explosion took place x Red lights (SOS) from German lines going up, also flares x Picking our way thro' darkness the flashes would at times show us the way & helped to avoid running into shell holes x When home we sat round Annie's cake, two bottles of stout, and a small piece of candle, and so finished up our trip in quite good style x The cake came in good O! x

7/19/1917 Fine x The heavy firing of last night continued throughout the day & night x In evening, just as dusk was falling, a Hun 'plane flew over our lines x Not seen by aircraft guns till close by us; flying low x "Antis" got going well & drove Fritz off; who however dropped several bombs in our vicinity, but not close enough to cause any damage x

7/20/1917 Fine x Nothing much doing beyond continuation of artillery bombardment x

- 7/21/1917 Fine x Very little firing x Fair amount aerial activity; one or two of Fritz's came over x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday x Pay day; drew 35 fr x Letter from Uncle Geo 16/7/17 x Wrote Joe x
- 7/22/1917 Beautiful day x Church parade morning; band in attendance x Sermon from 16c Matt, Lazarus & Dives x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday afternoon x Wrote Mother, concluding my Blighty trip x Great aerial activity x
- 7/23/1917 Fine x When gun crews changing over last night there was heavy enemy shelling, most of the 3rd Brigade being given a turn x The 4th Howitzers had a 6 gun blown out x Went to baths (Pont Nieppe) in afternoon; since my last visit the town has been severely shelled x The gun positions were again shelled this morning x Wrote Mrs Ambridge; 1/c picquet x In evening six Hun planes came or attempted to come, over our lines, but were driven off by our antis, & by five of ours who sailed after them; but Fritz had too good a start & did not wait to give battle x This is the first occasion I have seen so many enemy machines come over together x Later another one made a dash towards us, but the antis turned him back x Good deal artillery activity all day x



7/24/1917 Fine x In morning went with horses to be dipped; some of the mules very stubborn & took lot of persuading x Got back to camp about 1.30 x Took off rest of afternoon until 4 x Lay in paddock & had sleep x Evening went to Steernwerck (sic) & got book ("Betty Lane", by Zane Grey) from Y.M.C.A. library x Fair amount artillery activity x No good for aeroplane observations x Latest yarn is that N. Zealanders are going to Messopotamia (sic) for next winter! x We have been warned against new kind of gas shell; said to smell similar to garlic: effect: bad for eyes, and nauseating x If one's body comes in contact with the shell hole the portions touching it come out in blisters x Three Tommy officers were the first to be gassed by this stuff, and a couple of N.Z.F.A. who examined a shell hole came out in blisters x More Hun hate!

7/25/1917 Showers; cloudy all day x Little artillery fire x In evening went to see N.Z. Divisiónál Entertainers at Niéppe x Very good x First part pictures then Pierrots x Opened in scene from one of Hills Maorí operas; scenery not bad; electric light effect good x Very enjoyable x The halls is in shell area, & buildings round about have suffered x Good orchestra x Hard to realise while in hall that war was on x Part of roads very muddy x ----- // ----- (one of the silly things we had to do (red-tape I suppose or lack of common sense on part of "Heads")! When out, either walking or riding, on hot summer's day, we have to wear our tunics & bandoliers) why in the name of goodness we can't go in our shirt sleeves? Another of the little pin pricks we have to put up with in this --- (sic) army x More consideration is given to shining boots & buttons than to our food! x

7/26/1917 Fine, but dull x Jack Reid came to see me; arranged to meet at Nieppe in evening; but he was out when I came along x Just as I was turning in got orders to take 6 - horse team to Battery posy to remove gun which had been damaged during day by enemy shells x Good trip; G got back sometime after midnight x Heavy firing, one long continuous flash denoting big bombardment x No shells came over in our immediate vicinity; saw a dump go up - big red flash x Great aerial activity evening counted 30 or 40 of ours; also over 30 balloons x Hun burst a 9 - inch shell over our lines in attempting to hit balloon x We scattered as the pieces whistled among us ----- /-- Ploegsteert (evidently lost his way); star shells; vivid flashes from bombardment; dodging shell holes; bursting shells some way off x

7/27/1917 Fine x The last few days our gun positions have been shelled at intervals x Yesterday part of the cook house got in the way of one; result minus a few domestic appliances x E gun was damaged G put out of action x We have now only 3 guns out of 6 in action x A working party which went forward this morning to build new gun pits had to run for it several times x Matters are getting decidedly warm x Up to late afternoon the heavy artillery bombardment along a road front continued x I/c picquet x

7/28/1917 N.Z. mail x Letters from Mother (May 29 - June 5) Kit,  
Pickles (2) Koi & Matia, Howie, & Putty x Had just settled  
myself under a tree to write & read & smoke when I was told  
the mail had arrived so off I went hot haste & got my budget x  
Had the whole afternoon to enjoy them x Très bon! x Wrote to  
Miss Gunn x Very warm x Sent p.c's to Kit, Twinnies,  
Pickles, Howie & Putty x In evening took 6 horse team & G.S.  
Wagon to load material for new position on right of  
Ploegsteert Wood x Calm night,  $\frac{1}{2}$  moon x Started at 7.45;  
back soon after 1 am x Good deal firing going on, altho'  
nothing came very near us x Our own guns thick on nearing  
our "posy" & they were firing good deal x All along horizon  
quivering flashes of flame x Air was thick with shell smoke  
x Aeroplanes overhead, & every now & again little jets of  
flame high up showed "archies" were bursting x Flares & star  
shells; Germans have very brilliant flare; goes high up  
hangs for long time x Shooting flares also going up; boom of  
guns; whistling of shrapnel havee x Setting moon showed up  
red x On way home Fritz heavily shelled direction  
Armentieres, & set fire to building, throwing up oe red glow

7/29/1917 Soon after breakfast sky in the North banked up dark clouds, & in little while we could see ourselves in for a good storm x Sky later became intensely wild - looking a kind of yellowy-black x Thunder claps; vivid forked lightning which zig-zag from heaven to earth x Some of the flashes were of a bright pink colour & ran along ground x Then heavy rain x Rotten kind of day; would have been just the day for a good loaf if at home; but under our conditions not much in it x Hun heavily shelled Pont Nieppe & Armentières during morning; lull in afternoon on our section; [---] still going strong in Flanders; a few nights ago the N. Zldrs on our section attacked the sugar works with success, but later told to retire x I am told that they sent for artillery support, which for some reason was not forthcoming x Com. letter to Mother x

7/30/1917 Showery x Parcel of chocolate from Miss M. Ward x Many thanks x In evening went up with ammtn to guns x Only little shelling x One of our horses got into a ditch & delayed us for a time x Home about 12.30; biscuits & cold stew for supper x At ammunition dump met Geo. Chapman of Nelson x Artillery fire slackened during morning, but for rest of day very intense x The fires in Armentières started on Saturday evening are still burning fiercely; counted five separate ones x

7/31/1917 Fine but dull, turning to rain in evening x Artillery firing all day x An advance along big front is reported; our chaps are said to have again taken the sugar works, & hold agnst five counter attacks x In a misty rain soon after tea a Hun aeroplane flying so low the black crosses on his machine were plainly visible, came right over our lines x He must have lost his way, as a man was seen standing up & leaning over x Our "antis" were slow in getting on to him; but no doubt the hazy weather conditions were responsible for that x There was some good shooting when we did open out x He seemed to get away safely x Finished letter to Mother x

8/1/1917 Very wet day; mud & slush galore x Hardly any shelling to speak of x Ack. Miss Ward's bar of choc; & sent p.c's to Cora Mac.

8/2/1917 Wet, miserable day; up to our necks in mud & slush x Good news in paper from Flanders "push" x Today the artillery fire has been practically nil x "B" sub-section gun pit bivvey smacked by shell, wounding Sgt Davey x I/c picquet x

8/3/1917 Weather still rotten x Five papers from Kit; they came in very handy, as very little reading matter is about x

8/4/1917 Many happy returns Fred x Three years since we declared war on Germany x Posted p.c to Fred x

8/5/1917 Wrote Mother x First fine day for a week; sun very welcome x Changed over to the guns x

8/6/1917 Got to guns about 10 pm last night; fired a stunt (60 rounds) until 12.45; then to bed x Just as we were dozing off alarm gas & we had to put on our respirators x Soon passed over x Then, got again to sleep; but at 2.30 had to turn out to "strafe Fritz x Our gun pit is out in the open, cunningly hidden by two trees, with camouflage covering x Our sleeping posy is a concrete dugout, & should be safe so long as no direct hit x There are only four of us x Had to do a two hours guard x Got up at 9 & cooked breakfast x Shower during day; going fairly strong all day x Papers (3 bundles; from Kit x Sent over a shell for + + x Book & paper from Aunt Amy x Boiled rice today; nearly filled pot, then some water x The bally stuff swelled so that had to continue adding water, & before long every bally saucepan was holding rice!

8/7/1917 39 today! When we finished our stunt soon after 12 midnight I found a parcel from Annie, & letter from Joe Stewart & parcel of shirts x Annie's parcel chocs, brandy balls, tomatoes, nuts sardines, salmon & a jar of real raspberry jam! What O! Told the chaps my cousin sent it, but they reckoned it must have been from my "best girl" x For breakfast this morning we had fried bacon, bread & butter & raspberry jam, cheese, cold boiled rice with je jam, & finished up with sweet & cigarettes x Breakfast about 11 am x A few shells lobbed near us during last night x Had some wine at night in celebration of Da Tag! No dinner, except a snack of rice; at night roast loin mutton, new spuds French beans, fried & boiled onions, biscuits, cheese, raspberry jam, bread, tea x At night two bottles wine in honour birthday x usual stunt at night x



8/8/1917 Got up 11.15 & had breakfast; bacon, fried bread, jam, cheese tea; dinner fried meat & beans; tea, cocoa salmon, biscuits, jam, butter, stewed apples x Thunderstorm evening & heavy shower rain x Parcel from Joe Stewart; sent p.c to Aunt Amy & Annie x We are moving our guns forward tomorrow; some went tonight x No stunt tonight x While our guns have been on the Le Bizet sector we have been strafed occasionally & D gun especially has had to move several times x We are now under camelflange (sic) with good concrete dug-out to sleep in x [Pivotal] targets L.7. Aux A.P. a;s. R Zero Line 0 86.30 R. 5, D 4300 Day " 2.50L -- 5 D 4450 S.O.S. 13.40 L 72.50 R -- 4900

8/9/1917 Showery x Fritz was shelling on our left & rear all day; all we got were splinters x No stunt last to night x We moved out at about 9.30pm for old position at Messines, where we will be temporarily attached to a Tommy Brigade x

8/10/1917 (Under Messines Ridge) x Arrived here about midnight x Found pits under water & some of them knocked about x Since I was here nearly 2 months ago the position has been well smacked x We had not been here long when we had to run for it x Trenches had over foot of water in them; & we had to slither down them to get shelter x We found a dug out with a wire bed in it, well flooded x On this four of us crouched until things quietened down x I was the only one with cigarettes & as they were being passed round, they fell thro' the only hole in the wire into the water underneath x Great sorrow! We carted ammunition most of night barbed wire shellholes & went to bed at 4.30; two of us slept on the single wire bed; two others in pit x The position is a fair rotten one, & we won't be sorry if our stay is limited x We were supposed to relieve an Australian Battery further along the ridge, but they cannot get out for mud x Under shell fire all day x No bon! Letters from Annie and Aunt Amy x

8/11/1917 Sent p.c. to Mother; also one to Joe x A quieter day; fired about 40 rounds x Not much over from Fritz up till evening x Now (6) raining heavily x Later in evening, when carting ammunition, violent thunderstorm, with heavy showers x Flash lightening: one solid sheet of flame x Got wet thro', and when got to bivvy found it leaking badly, & had wet our blankets x Fixed things up as best we could & turned in "all standing" x Up at 2 am for two hours guard x Kind of rotten sort of night x Yesterday Fritz was sending over a lot of "Rubber Guts"! a new gun, with very high velocity; but local effect x Don't know they are coming till they arrive x One fell within 10 yds of me but did not explode x Thanks! Two calls during night x

8/12/1917 Quiet day, only a little coming over during night x Wrote Mother x Showery x Paper from Aunt Amy x Two or three retaliations during night x ----- // ----- Since coming to this position the tucker has been very short x Hardly any water obtainable, & what is has the colour of dirty cocoa when boiled for tea x We wash, shave, & clean teeth out of shell holes x

8/13/1917 Fine, but dull x Wrote to Annie x Nothing much doing x

8/14/1917 Had to "go" for it this morning x At about 6.30 was awakened by crash of shell, & someone yelling out advising us to "get" x We "got" x Just as I was bobbing my head out of the dug-out another shell fell & sent a shower of mud, which I just had time to dodge x Then we "went for it" across country, & pulled up in a fairly strong trench x Stayed here for an hour or so; then returned only to be again almost immediately "strafed" x We took our breakfast with us, however this time x Shelling died down later on x One shell fell betwn our pit & "A" sub, blowing in a small dug - out & burying one of the chaps, who however was not hurt x A miracle he wasn't blown to pieces x During afternoon several Fritz planes attacked our balloon x Almost the first shot from our "Archies" brought down a Fritz; he dived & then turned turtle x Not far from us x The others then made off without getting any balloons; most of the observers jumped out x Further north we saw smoke & think it must have been from a balloon x

8/15/1917 Plenty of shelling all round x Dull day with usual showers x We are shooting mainly only on retaliation, of which we have fired separate targets, ranging from 90RT to 25.40 .RT; range 4350 to 4175; also "Australians S.O.S, 80RT 5' Dep, R4575 x our own SOS 5' Dep, 4075, 13.45RT x We are on half- rations at the guns, & never get a decent feed x Plenty of food at W.L. so fault is the Battery's x

8/16/1917 All last night very heavy artillery in Epres sector; we took it up at 4.45 am today, & fired close on 1,000 rounds (five guns) on several different targets x Our firing was only a "blind" x Later in morning matters very quiet x ----- // ---  
----- Aeroplanes on bombing "picnics" pass over us every night x Numerous searchlights in sky, & when picked up the plane is clearly outlined in the silver light; have to throw off the searchlight and darkness pricked in little balls of fire as "Archies" burst x Suddenly we hear bang, bang, bang, as bombs are dropped x

8/17/1917 Fine day x In morning Fritz ranged on our position with [trencher] HE & in afternoon he heavily shelled our position x We retired "in good order" to shelter of trench well on our flank, where our only danger was from flying bits x After about 2 hours, shelling ceased & we returned to find shell holes all round our gun pits, which however were not damaged x It's rather a warm corner x Report thro that we took Lens yesterday x Today there has been a famine in cigarettes, as those ordered yesterday did not arrive x Hope to get in stock this evening x Later in evening (10.30) two shells suddenly fell among us, followed by others in quick succession x We again made for the trench, staying there till nearly midnight, when we returned x About 20 of us sat on fireboard of trench, smoking (smokes had just arrived) singing & cursing Fritz x The race across country in dark was exciting & I got tangled up in barbed wire x

8/18/1917 The remainder of the last night was quiet on our particular locality x About 9, shells came over again in our vicinity, & wounded one of a working party of Australians x Along with two others, I was helping him to the dressing station close handy when a shell (5.9) fell on the part of the road we had passed barely five seconds before x Oh Lor! For a moment we didn't know whether we were on our feet or on our head; but we very quickly got down on our "tummies" being covered with clods of flying earth x Every piece that hit us we thought might be a bit of shell; but our luck was in x Fritz is getting too bally familiar x Remainder of day quiet x Had a look over what was once the town of Messines

8/19/1917 2pm: I have just watched a Fritz aeroplane hit & brought down by our anti-aircraft, from 9 or 10,000 ft up x Came down turning over sideways, & every now & then sun would catch wings & shine like silver x Came down very steadily & fell just over ridge x One of our planes came along & hovered over him until he "bumped" x Later in day another 'plane came down further over; whose we did not know x Quiet day; & nice & fine x In evening our gun crew changed over & went to W. L. x Should have got N.Z. mail last night, but thro' a mess-up the bag went back to W. L x

- 8/20/1917 Very quiet at W. L. after the guns x Went to Dr to get my finger examined; had sprain or something, & it is now in splints x Fine day x Wrote Mother x
- 8/21/1917 Letters from Mother (June 12 - 19, Kit Pickles (2) Twinnies, Aunt Kate, Cora Mac, Cousin Blanche, Aunties & Billy Simpson x Sent p.c's to Blanche & Billy x Fine x I/c picquet x Papers from Kit and Aunt Amy x
- 8/22/1917 Warm day x In afternoon escorted a man to a Genl Court Martial, & was kept there until about 6 pm x Sent p.c's to Twinnies, Pickles, Cora Mac, Aunt Kate x Wrote Aunt Amy
- 8/23/1917 Fine day; showery evening x Bomb. F Adams, & Bert Marshall "went west" this morning, & Bomb Yell (slightly) & G Pitcher (dangerously) wounded x The "possy" is a rotten one, & we were bound to have casualties sooner or later x Pitcher died later in evening x
- 8/24/1917 Cold & showery x In morning Battery attended G. Pitcher's funeral x [George Jackson Pitcher 2/2511]
- 8/25/1917 Letters from Mother (June 26 - July 3), Kit ( and 10/-) Pickles, Aubrey, Ray, Eff, Nell & Cousin Annie x Fine day, but cold x Wrote Joe x



8/26/1917 Last night, as usual, enemy 'planes came over & dropped bombs; but in this instance they got too close to us to be comfortable x Sometime after ten, when most of us were asleep; I was awakened by a big report & clods of earth falling on our bivvy x I sat up in a hurry with the blankets over my head, & heard the shower falling on the roof x A few seconds later we heard another bomb. whistling thro' the air, but it fell too far away to be dangerous x The 'archies' gave him only a few rounds x It appears that Fritz shut off his engine & glided swiftly down before dropping his "eggs" x Concussion knocked a board or two off the bivvy x Worked all day; no time for church parade x Letters from Uncle Geo (20) & from National Bank N. Z. London, re money sent by Holly x Fine during day, but showery in evening x Pair bon socks from Matia x Thanks x

8/27/1917 Heavy rain last night, cleared up in morning, but resumed afternoon x Inspection by C.R.A. (Genl Johnston); diggings of a lot of work to be done; & who then we had to parade in heavy rain x Genl. satisfied! Papers from Harry Finney (summary & 3 Auckland Weeklies Bulletins ), Effie; letter from Joe x

8/28/1917 Showery all day x Plenty of mud x Wrote Mother, Kit & Matia, Holly, & p.c's to Harry Finney & Annie x Wrote Bank asking to remit 2.8d [ -- ] Had yarn Cyril Rout x

- 8/29/1917 Heavy showers all day x Weather turning quite wintery x We are moving out shortly; supposed to be going for a rest x I/c picquet
- 8/30/1917 Showery x Wrote Annie x We are feeling rather well now; not on a/c of army rations; but what we purchase out of our mess funds x Otherwise we would be on the verge of starvation x
- 8/31/1917 Still showery x Aeroplanes & balloons appeared for the first time for several days, taking advantage of a fine, spell between the showers x Wrote Aunt x — Mr Codron Fontaine 96 rue de Sartrouville a'Argenteuil Seine - et - oise I often sat & wrote at the estaminet of the above motherly old soul; very hospitable x
- 9/1/1917 Still showery x Wrote Effie x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday x
- 9/2/1917 Heavy showers all morning & part afternoon; no church parade on this a/c x Clear evening, with full moon x Wrote Mother
- 9/3/1917 Lovely cool sunny morning, & fine all day x Last night, with the moon at the full in a clear sky, we expected evening aeroplanes over on bomb-dropping "stunts" x We were not disappointed & got very little sleep owing to the noise of gun fire & the whirr of the engines x Lots of bombs dropped, but none in our immediate vicinity x Paper from Aunt Amy x [SR] 28/7/17 x With return fine weather artillery again active x The balloon near our W.L. was heavily strafed x

9/4/1917 Another good day x Two of our guns are coming out this evening; the remainder tomorrow; & one more off on Thursday morning x

9/5/1917 Artillery (mostly enemy) & aeroplanes very active x This afternoon I had to ride to Bgde general headquarters x When riding there few shells falling; but continual x When arrived found all the chaps have cleared out, & as I was looking round shells came over, so off I went "toutswite", (sic) & found the chaps in a paddock some distance away x Waited for best part of two hours during which shells struck the billets & stable & the farmhouse x Then came back to W.L., as no chance of getting to general headquarters that day x The people living in the farmhouse cleared out; & I saw one of the woman camping her "Sunday" boots, a parasol & a skirt, also the inevitable bag x Hard luck for them x In evening went to picture show at YMCA at Nieppe x The remainder of our guns moved out this evening x Year since we went into action on the Somme x

9/6/1917 During night, after close day, heavy rain, accompanied by thunder & lightening x Fine from early morning x Moved off at 10.30 & trekked to other side of La Mottee, (sic) (Morbecque) which was reached at 4.30 x Took same route as when leaving for Somme last year x Soon after getting into our billets another thunderstorm with rain came on x No tea until 7.30, as cooks were lead the [-----] I was in the advance party x Only had 20 mins stop during journey for lunch - slice of bread, jam & piece of cheese x No tea x Rain of cleared up for a bit but more rain later & evening x Billets no good & scattered x 1/c horse picquets x Heavy but short stunt this morning early x While passing the Forest of Nieppe we saw a portion of the Chinese labour battalion at work at the saw mill x Trek about 16 miles x

9/7/1917 Very hot & muggy x Rain during night x on Grazing horses all morning; harness cleaning afternoon x Went to Morbecque in evening x Not much of a place, usual church & estaminets surrounding cnty very pretty; nice green fields & plenty trees x Able to get a few apples & pears in orchards x Tucker very short x Letter from Aunt Amy; also Mother & aunty x parcel for birthday! (Cherry pie, tin sardines, herrings, sausages cocoa tablets, tin beef extract, Bovril, tin Marmalade x

9/8/1917 Dull, but no rain x Same routine as yesterday x Parcel from Holly (cigarettes, boot laces, & lead pencils, & sticking plaster) x Very acceptable parcel; Three Castle cigs a luxury x We are moving off tomorrow morning x Tucker still short; if it were not for our own money for canteen we would be just about starving x

9/9/1917 Trek about 15 miles 9 Sun Reveille 5; beautiful morning x Moved off 8; heavy dew in grass sparkling in moonshine like thousands diamonds x Very warm later on in day x Passed thro following villages: Steenbecque (where we detrained last April on arrival from Havre) Thennes, Pecqueir, Pont de Lacque (big ammunitionworks) La Roupie, Lambres, arriving Estrée Blanche 1.30 x The whole brigade parked on the slope of a beautiful green meadow; surrounded by tall trees & chateau at one end x By the time we had watered & fed the horses, it was 2.15, & we had to parade again at 3 to groom & clean harness, as the G.O.C. was expected to inspect us tomorrow x This will mean that after we h gone some miles, & everything had got dirty we will march past the G.O.C x The G.O.C. is hereby heartily damned! Had a look thro village evening; usual sort x Big English aerodrome close by - dozens of machines continually rising x Billets not bad; been in worse x Had tea (eggs, bread & butter coffee in village; too long to wait for our own x One of the M'lles, said she was from Lens, & after a bit of talk she said in reply to a question: "Me same as you;

9/10/1917 Reveille 4.30; moved off at 8 x Very misty early morning; but later in forenoon weather hot & sultry x Passed over rather hilly country, & thro' following villages: Enquin; Erny St Julien; [Cycequin] Fauquembergues, arriving at [Loroquin] at 1.45 pm x G.O.C. did not turn up x Passed good many "orsies" billets; also "Porks & Beans" (Portuguese) x Billets very scattered & inferior; wagon lines not bad, but will be muddy with first rains x The village we are in does not hold out much hope for amusement; but surroundings pretty, green fields, plenty trees x Had swim in evening x We are out for sectional training; for how long not definitely known x Trekged about 12 miles x

9/11/1917 Fine & warm x Grazing horses morning; harness cleaning afternoon x Letter from Joe S x Wrote to Holly, Howie, Aunt Amy & N. Bank N.Z. x

9/12/1917 Fine x Gun drill morning; inspection by G.O.C (Russell) x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday afternoon x Concert by Canterbury Batt Band in village (Thembronne) (sic) evening x Had five eggs x Wrote Mother x Paper Aunt Amy x A number of chaps are going to Aldershot for two months x

- 9/13/1917 Letters from Mother (July 10-17-24) Kit (10/- thanks)  
Pickles, Twinnies, Mrs Thornton, Marion Thornton & Aubrey  
x Most of day spent getting ready for horse shows to be held  
commencing tomorrow x More work for us, & a little praise  
for the officers, I suppose, at our expense!
- 9/14/1917 Showers at night & during forenoon x Routine same as  
yesterday x Our Battery won the best turnout for our  
Brigade; & in the inter-brigade contest tied with the Third  
Battery x General Johnston, who judged decided to toss for  
the honour of representing the N. Z. Division at the Anzac  
Horse Show, & we lost; but were awarded the cup x All this  
business is a bally lot of rot; giving us extra work when we  
are supposed to be out for a rest x Wrote to Bry Bassett x  
Letter from Annie x
- 9/15/1917 A year since we made the advance on the Somme from  
Death's valley thro' Longeval & Delville Wood to position in  
Gas valley x Well we remember that day; & all the incidents  
connected therewith x Fine day x At football the 13th & 12th  
Batteries drew 1-1 9 points each x 1/2 holiday x 1/c picquet x

9/16/1917 Papers from Effie & Aunty wrote Miss Garlick x Fine day x Church parade morning x "Padre" in his sermon impressed upon us the need of being cheerful & looking on the bright side of things while out for a rest x He rubbed it into officers a bit x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday x 13th beat General headquarters at soccer 1 - 0 x Went to Thiembonne (sic) in evening & listened to band & wandered thro' pretty country lanes x The Y.M.C.A. have a marquee handy where we can obtain cocoa & biscuits x

9/17/1917 Fine x Battery sports afternoon x Easy day x Sent p.c. to Kit ack. 10/- ----- Signs are not wanting that the manpower of France is a serious one x During our treks thro' the country I have noticed repeatedly the invariable absence of young men & youths - all to be seen are old men & women & young boys & girls x This seems to prove the all available reserves & boys over 17 or 18 have been called up x Even in the few towns of any size we have passed thro' the same shortage of youth is noticeable x The help of America will be a big factor to France x

9/18/1917 Dull & showery x Easy day x Wrote Joe x

9/19/1917 Divisional sports; did not go on duty x Fine cool morning x Had easy day x Wrote Pickles x Summary from Harry Finney (July) x



9/20/1917 (On Trek, waiting on roadside of Route Nationale 7 am) x  
 "Hi you chaps, out you get & be ready to move off  
 immediately" was the way we were nicely disturbed at 2. 30  
 am today by the O. S. x After satisfying ourselves that the  
 O. S. was neither walking in his sleep nor "drunk" we  
 "rousted out" protesting volubly at the ways of the army x  
 Drizzling rain was falling; it was pitch dark, a good deal of  
 harness was not put back stripped for cleaning so altogether  
 things were not exactly as they might have been for a sudden  
 trek x Fed up horses & then ourselves at 4.30; plenty of  
 porridge, pork & beans & bully x Moved off at 6, and as  
 stated above, we are now halting for 1/2 hour x Do not yet  
 know where we are going; or the reason for the unexpected call  
 x The whole Division seem to be moving, so perhaps  
 something is "doing" x We followed the Route Nationale (a  
 splendid metal road, with trees on either side) as far as  
 Wizernes, then branched off, picking up main road again at  
 Arques, having lunch just before entering latter - town,  
 within easy sight of St Omer x From Wizernes followed same  
 route as from Lumbres last April, as far as Eblinghem (sic);  
 9/21/1917 Parcel from Annie (cake, apple, tin milk, sardines, jam,  
 paste, & 2 tins toffee x Good; had big feed x Beautiful clear  
 morning & sunny day x In evening went with A. C. to  
 Hazebrouck x Evidence of German shelling and bomb  
 dropping x Been thro' place before x Fine large square, with  
 band rotunda, & also fine looking municipal buildings x ----  
 There are a number of the Chinese labour crowd camped  
 close by, engaged on railway construction x They are mostly  
 big, loose-limbed chaps, & all wear straw hats x They pass to  
 & from on way to work x

9/22/1917 Sunny morning, after early fog was dispersed by sun's rays  
x Grazing horses morning; fooling about afternoon x Wrote  
Mother, & p.c. to Annie x

9/23/1917 Letter from Uncle Geo & paper Aunt Amy x Fine day x  
Exercising horses before breakfast; then church parade; then  
stables; & in afternoon football match between 13 & 12th, the  
latter winning after close & exciting game by 5 - 0 x Our  
work on Sunday is truly not monotonous - sometimes x  
"Bucksheesh" parcels from C/ch Lady Liverpool Fund x Mine  
contained tin tongues, tin milk, cake soap, some cigarettes &  
a pair socks x Inside socks was a kindly note signed "Mrs F.  
Wakelin, Tinwald, Ashburton, Canterbury N. Z x" Fine day  
x News of British advance at Epres x In evening walked to  
village of , (space left blank) , & had a bit of a "sing-song" at  
an A.S.C. Canteen x

9/24/1917 One of the warmest days we have had for a long time x (a heavy early morning mist is usually followed by a sunny day) x Went to baths, about an hour's walk, for much needed bath x Had a ride nearly all way home, & spent a pleasant  $\frac{1}{2}$  hour in a cool estaminet x Letter from Daisy & 3 "Dominions" from Kit x Ack. pair socks rec'd (encircled) yesterday x Had for supper some biscuits & Annie's pot of good old home-made raspberry jam x At football D & A subs drew - no score x Should be going on leave in a week or two x Hazebrouck is a very busy railway centre, lines running out in all directions, along which trains of great length are passing day & night every few mins x They are never out of hearing x Letter from Daisy x

9/25/1917 Another very warm day x Usual routine morning x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday afternoon on a/c football between 11th & 12th batteries; 12th won 6 - 3 x Evening went into Hazebrouck to try to get my razor mended; no go x P.C. from Joe (How we are fed) Issue Mess fund Bully Beef (5 tins) Beans, { Porridge Bread, butter tea Bread & jam, tea { rice & fruit Meat {carrots, onions, spuds

9/26/1917 Fine; orders came about 4 to pull out at 6, & we are now awaiting orders to move off x Don't know where we are going x Wrote to Annie & p.c. to Jack Reid x We moved off for "Somewhere in France" at 7 pm.

9/27/1917 Trekled from 7 last night until 1 this morning getting to bed about 2.30 x Good journey in nice moonlight night x Followed main road passing through Steenbauge (?) & Popenheinge (?) (Popenhinge) pulling up some distance. other side last-named town x Several of our air machines were out; could see their lights x also plenty of searchlights & lot of gun fire x We are on the Epres sector, & will go into action most likely tomorrow x Lot of hops grown about here, & the smell of them drying brought back memories to me x During day had orders to be ready to move off; but when all prepared, order cancelled x Probably go into action tomorrow x The traffic on the roads here is reminiscent of the Somme - quite 300 or 400 vehicles are passing every hour x Slept like a top until reveille at 6.30; x Warm day x Parcel from Mother; ginger nuts, tin cocoa, cheese & soups; all in my old lunch tin x As soon as I opened it I exclaimed "that looks familiar" also found, two sheets of an some old "copy" of mine x 1/c picquet

9/28/1917 Fine spell continues x RX went into action near Epres, remainder of us going in tomorrow x General Johnston CR addressed us today saying we were going in for probably three days to help in an important "stunt"; the capture of another portion of a ridge overlooking big tract flat land x He said that with this ridge entirely in our hands might probably mean evacuation of Ostend x After the stunt we are going further to the left (in direction coast) to join up with our own division x In evening went into Poperinghe; large city, with some fine churches & public bldgs - In the large cobbled sq, the Band of the Seaforth Highlanders paraded & gave us music x Scene very animated; Square full of soldiers; Scotties, English, Australian, N.Z., Jamaicans (natives) ; lorries & motor cycles dashing thro; several aeroplanes flying low down overhead, & the and above all the sound of pipes & drums x Town shows signs of shelling, especially churches x Many buildings facing square old; but some very good x Most be big concentration of troops here, as city full of soldiers x Beautiful moonlight night, & soon after "turning in" a Fritz came over our direction in bomb-

9/29/1917 Cloudless day & warm x Bomb. Esquillant killed last night; yesterday & Gunr Hansen today, & Philpot wounded x Very heavy firing during night x In evening went across to camp of Chinese Labour Battalio x Some fine strapping men; seemed very cheerful; kicking football & fooling around genially; also had a band; small drum & couple of brass "kind of affairs" x Not very musical but plenty of noise x Camp very clean x Had a short talk to a Yankee doctor i/c of the camp x He "guessed" the war would not last long, & did not think Germans would fight to last man x A full moon brought out numerous Fritz bombing planes, & the sound of exploding bombs was frequent & at times rather close x The searchlights picked up several, & held them in their rays while a perfect hurricane of "archies" & machine guns got fired at them x Saw more brought down x Very fine night & also exciting x between 8 & 9 was a warm time; but throughout the night the planes were active x When our own are caught in rays they drop red light as signal x Shifting W.L. tomorrow x

9/30/1917 Moved off at 9.30 to new W.L. about 5k nearer Epres x Very heavy firing early morning x We are now at St Lawrence camp; huge place; an incessant stream of traffic; motor lorries in hundreds, caterpillars, moving troops, transports etc x Weather still fine & warm x With a bright moon Fritz was again busy at night; good many bombs dropped about x Some of his planes came directly overhead, & sounded very near; but he didn't pay our particular spot any attention x While working during day heard singing in YMCA within a few yards; wondered what was on; until someone suggested that day must be Sunday! Went to service in YMCA evening: good singsong; lights went wrong so we struck matches & sing by their light! Have a decent bivvy; no floor; but ground isn't bad to sleep on x Not far away short steep aero scrap; several machines engaged; one came down x A Hun I think, as more of our "antis" got on to the other machines, which we well over our lines x

10/1/1917 Many happy returns dear Mother x From early morning right on to midday terrific bombardment going on; understand that our infantry are "going over" x Good luck to them, Plenty of Huns over last night on bomb dropping excursions; Some came right overhead, but "laid (sic) no eggs" here; plenty in other parts of the large area in which we are camped x C X & L X guns went into action this evening x Wrote Mother x Paper from Aunt Amy x

10/2/1917 More bombing in vicinity of camp last night x In afternoon went up to the gun position near St Julien x Great amt traffic all way, & took us about 4 hrs to reach there x Main road splendid one, with overhanging trees for miles x Passed thro what was once the city of Epres x Not as much demolished as Messines or Mountauban (sic) for instance, but is a much larger town x I could not see a building that was intact x There are remains of what were splendid buildings x After leaving Epres the country - flat - is swarming with guns, all close together x Our own guns are about 4 yds apart x We can see the Hun guns flashing; we are here for a stunt to take Passiondale (sic) ridge x When having something to eat about 10 a Hun plane came over & made us beat a hasty retreat as he dropped his bombs x Our guns - like all the others are in the open under camouflage x Tonight 3 days rations of bully beef & biscuits came up for the stunt which is said to commence on the 4th x

10/3/1917 Letters from Mother (July 30) Pickles, Aunty, & p.c. from Joe Stewart; the smallest N.Z. mail I have yet received; hope to get more later on x Rain during night; pit very swampy today x Bully beef & beans for breakfast x Few shells coming over night x [Recd] 1 am next day x



10/4/1917 Sometime in forenoon (seated in one of Hindenberg's (sic) concrete machine gun positions in former German trench, near St Julien and beyond Epres at 6 this morning we commenced firing with a few other hundred guns, & are still at it x So far the infantry have evidently advanced as planned, as we have kept to our barrage programme x Great sight when guns from everywhere commenced firing x For a time not many shells came our way, but from about 9 up to 5 including now a lot has been dropping round us x A shell set fire to portion of our pit, my haversack & most of contents sharing untimely fate x At this precise moment coming over very consistently x Just saw a tank going back from battle front x Almost 15 were under camouflage not far away last night x First Battery on or right have been smacked up a bit; so far we have escaped x Am feeling horribly grimy x Later in day Gr O. Harrobin got slight wound leg x Fair amount of stuff came over x The shell which struck side of our pit blew up quantity of ammunition x Sleeping tonight, or trying to, in this dug-out; sitting on a bench, with feet dangling in water x Getting up again at 3 tomorrow morning & on duty

10/5/1917 very little sleep; up at 3 & at 5 fired some 60 rounds x At 9 had 4 hrs off for a spell x During the night we had fired our six SDS calls x Some rain during morning x Conditions generally are uncomfortable, the mud is not as bad as the Somme, in its adhesive qualities, it being more loamy here x From 6 am yesterday to 6 this morning each of our 6 guns has fired 600 or 700 rounds x

10/6/1917 Rain most of day; with hail showers x Very cold x Usual firing going on, especially on our left x We had our share from Fritz, & skedaddelled" once x (sic) Feeling just "anyhow", & prepared for anything that may turn up x Mark Tapley would be feeling ecstasies of delight if he were here! Big movement of troops etc all over the surrounding country x Wrote Mother x

10/7/1917 Miserable day; cold & wet x Usual heavy firing x During short interval fine in forenoon about 70 aeroplanes - ours & Fritz's were up; but save for an occasional dash each side kept on their "own side of the road" very unique sight x A driving rain squall dispersed them x

10/8/1917 Fed up ! ! ! ! Why! ( A few days later) Got to bed at 3 a.m.,  
up at 8 x Hard at it during morning carting ammunition  
for stunt tomorrow x After dinner went forward with advance  
party to prepare pits for guns x On way up saw dozens  
stranded tanks; also fair number dead Tommies x The whole  
country is a mass of shell craters x Concrete dug-outs full  
dead Huns x Each of us carried sheet corrugated iron x Good  
deal of shells coming over x Worked until about 4.30 when  
rain came on & we commenced to get back x In meantime  
Hun had increased fire & had put heavy barrage thro' which  
we had to pass x Shells fell uncomfortably close, & we had to  
make use of shell holes x Got back all right x This was our (D  
sub) night off & we were looking forward to a full nights rest  
x Raining & blowing hard x Soon after 6 went over to our  
bivvy, which was under water x Baled it out and were  
beginning to settle down, when we were roused out to dig out  
the water cart, which had got stranded on its way up to the  
guns x Rain & wind increasing so off we had to go, over a  
road full of shell holes & a lake of water x Dark as pitch x  
Several times went up to knees in water x Did the job, & then

10/9/1917 up at 4.30 x "Hard thing" putting on wet pants; made a dirty shirt into pair of underpants, which didn't make the pants feel too cold x Thank goodness had pair dry socks x Commenced, firing for the attack at 5.15 continuing until 10.45 x While at the gun had a letter handed to me in which the hope was expressed that I was having a peaceful time x Just then hundreds of guns were firing x Very few shells fell near us today x The Hun evidently having not enough for his big job x Our infantry reached their objective post of Paschendale (sic) Ridge I believe x Weather [was] fine & nice drying wind x Saw prisoners, going along road x In an aerial fight saw a Hun set on fire & came to earth, & volume of flame increasing the nearer he came down x The machine was under control & swooped down in three long twists x Another one (don't know whose) also dashed to earth x Had orders to shift forward all guns, but was countermanded x In evening the gun crews changed over, & I went to the wagon lines, near Epres x Paper from Aunt Amy x

10/10/1917 Letter from Aunt Amy x Wagon lines very muddy & full of shell holes x Alongside main road over which constant stream traffic passed x Decent bivvy, & had my first night's unbroken rest for over a week x Also saw a newspaper - the second for 10 days x Early morning fine; but later cold wind & showers x Gloves came in handy x Some of our guns moved forward to advance position x

10/11/1917 This has been a bad day for our battery - five men killed, three horses ditto, & 6 wounded x The killed were Lt Churnside (died wounds) Cpl Mullaney, Gnrs Payling, Brennen & Brown (last died wounds) x Other batteries also sustained casualties x Our guns were being moved forward when Fritz commenced heavy shelling, one falling among our chaps & doing all damage x E sub gun had wheel blown off x The road was heavily shelled all day, & the gun teams & pack men had very trying time x Parcel (chocolate) from Mother, which we snacked up tonight & voted it good x Sent p.c. to Annie x

10/12/1917 Rain during night x Another stunt this morning; so far do not know how it went x We are all having a hard time x This morning a party of 36 of us with 72 horses packed ammunition to forward position x Went across country first trip; heartbreaking experience x Horses continually sinking in mud to bellies; no track; impossible to dodge shell holes x Next trip we came by way of an alleged road x Thick with traffic; dead horses & mules; wounded men x I was not packing but took a pack horse for a chap in difficulties & had bad time with it; the poor brute lay down in its tracks twice; & I had to unload it & get it going again x We were going from 7 am to 3 (some later) in afternoon x We are now (7pm) cosy in our bivvy with rain beating down in torrents x Shell fire from Fritz not very heavy, tho' some dropped uncomfortably close; but sodden nature of ground made effect of shells very local x

10/13/1917 Rain, hail, thunder! Hurrah!! Everything in the garden lovely x Wagon lines over ankle deep in mud x Walking to the baths at a village & had hot shower bath - the first for many weeks x Parcel of two tins lollies from "The Girls" & Howie x We snacked them up in our bivvy under a heavy rain shower x No definite news about yesterday's attack x But the weather is, & has been certainly against us x There are rumours the N.Z. have been back smacked up x Letter from Annie x

10/14/1917 Fine, but dull x Gr Lawton killed at guns; very sorry, as one of the best chaps I have met x Today volunteers were called for from the artillery for stretcher bearers for our infantry, so about 30 from our battery, along with others reported to Col. Murray (a very jovial gentleman) at No 3 F. A. Advanced Dressing Stn, a walk of about 2 hrs x Arrived there informed that all stations were about clear, as hundreds of volunteers (including 600 Tommies) had brought in most of our wounded from the front line x While kept waiting about we saw two planes tumble down (Huns I believe) one of our ammunition dumps (close by) go up, and two balloons (one of each side) burnt x About 7 pm half of the bearers were sent home, & the remainder of us stood by all night & went out in the morning (Monday) No blankets no overcoats, & a frosty night, made matters very cold x breakfast of hot tea & coffee & biscuits x

10/15/1917 Parcel from Mother (tin of sardines - jam milk, soup, ginger nuts etc) & one from Aunt Amy (underclothing, books, toffee, coffee tablets x Last night was bitterly cold with a hard white frost x We simply "stood by" practically all night - it was pretty rough x However we were not as badly off as some of the wounded x About 8.30, a runner came down from the front line saying five stretcher cases were there, so we started off after them x It took us (7 (sic) & eight to a stretcher) to bring in our man over two or three miles of mud & shell holes x The mud at times was knee - deep & the going was awfully rough & hard on the chaps x Coming down salvos of shells (3) seemed to follow us down, one salvo dropping very close to us x We arrived at dressing stations about 1 o'clock just about "played out" x The hardest work I have done; never knew a man could feel - so heavy x Reached our camp about 2 & then to bed x



10/16/1917 Fine with exception few light showers x Hun 'planes over last night & dropped a bomb in artillery lines - about 100 yds from our bivvy x Fell just on side of a tent, which was blown to shreds, & but only two of the occupants were slightly wounded x Paper ("Mail") from Mother x We are said to be moving out in a few days x Ate Mother's jam for supper & everyone voted it "awful good", /-/ & so it was x Extra blanket issued yesterday x Rum is also again being issued x Sent f.s.c. to Aunt Amy (ack parcel & letter) & Miss Thornton, & p.c. to Mother x Last night good deal of mustard gas came over, & we got some whiffs of it x

10/17/1917 Fine x Much aerial activity x Just at dawn a Hun came over our camp & turned his machine guns on the camp, wounding a horse & a man of another battery x In forenoon our antis brought down a Fritz not far from our lines x There was a burst of flame, & the 'plane shot upwards & the flames appeared to go out x Then a wing fell off & down he commenced to fall x Several of our own 'planes were now buzzing around him & followed him down x Both the men were killed when picked up x A few minutes later another 'plane, much further away, also plunged to earth x Our 'antis' had been firing in the direction, so it was most likely another Hun x The wing of the one first destroyed remained floating around for some time x Wrote a note to Annie x Few showers during evening x

10/18/1917 Heavy rain during night x The ground never gets a chance to dry & we are ankle deep in the blessed stuff x Fine during day x About a dozen Gotha machines - having an enormous spread of wing - came over today, accompanied by a squadron of fighters x They dropped a few bombs, & then turned back, either drawn off by our 'antis' & planes or having accomplished their purpose; the latter I doubt, as by their numbers they came over to do a lot of damage x Every night bombs are dropped hereabouts; tonight we had to "douse" our lights several times before 8 o'clock x A chap gets little chance to read or write at night now x Wrote Annie

10/19/1917 Heavy hail storm & rain at intervals x Good deal artillery fire x Wrote Mother x Have had, as usual, to "douse" our lights several times owing to Fritz coming over x He is a darned pest x

10/20/1917 At 2 a.m. was "rousted" out to go to the guns with ammunition x Saddled my "moke" & after "breakfast" (bread, tea & bully) found the brute was rolling in the mud x Dark as pitch; darn the old horse x Got away about 3.30, & got ammunition to gun position x The road was being shelled & some came rather close x A "Tommy" battery with two guns were blocking the road & seemed helpless x We pushed thro' them as shells were falling near by x Soon after passing a certain part of the road, a bomb was dropped killing four horses & two men of 4th Howitzer x Home about 8; made myself cup of tea from parcel Mother sent; jolly good x Fine day; but stacks of mud x Huns are now overhead dropping "eggs" x "Bucksheesh" parcel from Ch/ch Liverpool C'ttee (tin sheep tongues, piece soap, pr laces, towel pkt jelly crystals, tin milk, hdkchf, tin cigarettes (greens) x Every member Battery received similar parcel x Ack. same x

10/21/1917 Nelson Day x Bright & warm day; the best for some time x Papers from Harry Finney & Aunt Amy x Wrote Christmas greetings to Kit, Nell, Thorntons, Mrs Blackburn & Harry Finney x Going up to the guns tomorrow x Bombs as usual tonight x

10/22/1917 Rain during night x Went to guns ; plenty of shelling; Fritz being very active x No rain during day x Our position is not a good one; heaps of mud x Our bivvy comes in for some heavy shelling x By the look of things we are not going to be particularly comfortable; but will have to make the best of it x Very heavy firing on our left in early morning, & at intervals during day x The conditions here are appalling x Our Battery is the only one in our division that has all six guns forward x It's a miracle we got them in at all x Mud up to horses' bellies, no road, shell holes everywhere x Many guns are lying about stuck in mud x Some are being attempted to be pulled in by manual labour, 50 or 60 men taking best part of day to move a gun 50 yards x It's the limit x It needs superhuman efforts to carry on x From our gun position to the cookhouse is a walk of about  $\frac{1}{4}$  mile through mud & water & shells x

10/23/1917 Heavy rain most of night, & showers throughout day x Our bivvy is a pretty hard thing, but a chap gets a wink or two of sleep notwithstanding discomforts x We scraped the mud off the corrugated iron which we slept on & didn't do so badly x

10/24/1917 Fine till evening, when heavy rain came on x Our bivvies were heavily shelled in the evening, but beyond showers of mud we were safe x Lot of artillery fire throughout day x Wrote Ray x Did 2  $\frac{1}{2}$  hrs gas guard; wet & cold x Got to bed & soon had some warmth in my body x

10/25/1917 After heavy rain of last night the ground was a bad as ever this morning x Strong cold wind, but fine x While around our position were hundreds of pack horses, mules & men Fritz opened out heavily & soon there was wild confusion - horses running everywhere, men scurrying ditto x Also shelled road x We stayed in our pit for some time & then went forward 100 yds or so & took shelter in a shell-hole, with mud over boot tops x Jolly cold & uncomfortable still shelling at 3 pm x While going to the gun position from the cookhouse after tea, struggling thro' mud & slush, I endeavoured to jump a shell hole, & would have succeeded had not my foot caught in a telephone wire: Result: fell fair & square into it! ugh! it was cold x Got pretty wet & as I have to sleep in clothes tonight I got a sandbag or two & put under the wet places x We raised some coke from somewhere & made a little gas fire sufficient to dry our socks x Going to be a "stunt" tomorrow morning when the infantry are having a "go" at Paschendale (sic) Ridge x

10/26/1917 From 5 this morning & throughout the day there has been terrific firing from the British guns covering our infantry in their attack on part of Paschendale (sic) Ridge x We commenced to fire at 5.40, continuing until 9, at rate of fire varying from 15 secs to 1 min x Thereafter we fired at intervals x As usual heavy rain has fallen all day x I came off duty at 12.30, as wet & muddy as could be x under my wet pants I put pyjamas, dry socks, but a wet spot in my back I have to put up with x Feeling cheerful all the same & conscious that I am earning my pay! Saw prisoners going down x Fritz put very little over our roads: one shell struck an ammunition dump, a few yards from our gun; but a few tin hatfuls of water soon put out the flames x Found letters from Joe & Annie x

10/27/1917 Heavy artillery fire from our guns all day; very little from Fritz x The Germans must be getting "pasted" unmercifully by our fire chiefly from the "heavies" x Last night a shell landed immediately outside the back of our pit, & covered our gun & ammunition with mud x Fritz is a confounded nuisance giving us extra work to do in cleaning our ammunition x Sent a note to Joe x Parcel from Mother, Effie (tin loaf sugar, tobacco & papers stick chocolate) x com, letter to Mother x

10/28/1917 Fine, but dull x Our artillery very active all day x Fritz very quiet until about 5.15, when he "strafed" us for about 1/4 hr, wounding two of our men - Clark & Huskinson x While on our way from gun position to cook-house we came in for some shelling; one bursting within a few yards of us x Just as we got under shelter shells fell thick & fast wounding the two men referred to above x Posted letter to Mother x (Huskinson died next day)

10/29/1917 Hurrah! Letters from home at last: Four from Mother (Aug 7, 14, 21, 26) Kit, Pickles, Koi, Aunt Kate, Rachel, Annie, Uncle Geo: parcel from Annie (handkerchiefs & writing pad) & paper Aunt Amy x During last night Fritz was mean enough to put a shell clean into the cookhouse (alongside our bivvy), & scattered the rations in all directions, besides wrecking the show x Yesterday three of our drivers were wounded by a bomb while going thro' Epres x No rain today for a wonder x The Italians have had a nasty smack, losing 30,000 prisoners & 300 guns x Note to Annie x Karsten One of the men wounded, is said to have "gone west" x

10/30/1917 Another "stunt" this morning commencing at 6, & going until night, thereafter firing at frequent intervals on 8 OS x Fine up till midday, when rain came on & looks as if it will last for ever x Very cold x



10/31/1917 Rain cleared off last evening, & today has been wholly fine x  
This fine weather is becoming quite monotonous! Tomorrow  
we are being relieved by the Canadian Artillery x None of us  
will be sorry to leave this place & hope never to see it again x  
Gas came over tonight but not very strong x Rather a quiet  
day for the artillery x In the "stunt" yesterday our infantry  
gained their objective - portion of the Ridge x Had a wash  
and a shave x Body in need of clean clothes & a bath x

11/1/1917 Today we were relieved by the Canadians, & we handed over &  
went to the wagon lines from where we move off (for a spell it  
is said) tomorrow x During the five weeks we have been on  
this front everyone (especially the gunners) has had a rough  
time x We have had eight men killed also large number  
horses killed, a similar number wounded x Conditions were, I  
think, even worse than the Somme x We are all pleased at the  
prospect of a change and a relief from the continual strain x  
Fine, but dull x Last night the wagon lines were heavily  
bombed, & a good number of horses killed x

11/2/1917 Misty day; no rain x Moving out tomorrow morning x Two  
papers (Post & Mail) from Effie x

- 11/3/1917 Moved off from wagon line about 9.30 am; road choked with traffic, & we consequently made slow progress x Went about 15 kilos (sic), reaching Watuo (sic) at 2.30 x No meal on way; Had breakfast & x Cold & dull day x Everyone "merry & bright" at prospect of a spell away from firing line x Letter from Joe
- 11/4/1917 Fine but dull x Letters from Mother (Sept 4) Aunt Kate, Willie & Koi; paper Aunt Amy x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday x Wrote Mother x Coupons & photo from Wop x
- 11/5/1917 Fine; but dull & cold x We are having an easy time, which is much relished after our five weeks' strenuous time x Wrote Willie x
- 11/6/1917 Few showers; dull x Moving out tomorrow for Wallon Cappell x Parcel of handkerchiefs & gloves from Joe for the boys x Easy day x
- 11/7/1917 Reveille 4.15; moved off 8; arriving at old wagon lines near Hazebrouck 11.30 x Cold & wet journey x We have a decent billet some distance away x Passed thro' Steenvorde, fair size town x
- 11/8/1917 Few hours sunshine morning; afternoon dull & cold; evening, rain x Letter from Annie; cigs & tobacco from old Pickles x

11/9/1917 Aubrey's birthday x Wrote Pickles x Wop, Annie, Uncle Geo, Hui Harrison x Dull & cold; few showers x Easy day x A Belgian refugee & family occupy part of the farmhouse we are billeted in, & at night we take possession of the kitchen, play cards, read, talk & drink plenty of coffee x The old lady is a talkative old soul, but a good sort & provides us with hot water for shaving x Before the war she lived near Epres & her boy went to school in Paris; he now works from early morn till late at night x The poor little chap looks dead weary when he comes home x wrote Pickles, Wop [-----] Annie x

11/10/1917 Cold & wet x In afternoon went to Div baths & had wash x Parcel of socks from Joe x Bad news from Russia; also Italy x The Italian [reverse] will no doubt mean that we will go back into the line sooner than we otherwise would x Tonight we invaded the old dame's kitchen, where I took off my wet boots & changed into dry socks x The old lady seeing me bootless lent me a pair of clogs x Bon! Wrote Joe x

11/11/1917 Rain most of day; church parade cancelled in consequence, but instead of being given a chance to keep dry we were kept fooling about in the rain till midday x These are the sort of things that get a man's back up x Instead of making things easy for us when out of the firing line, those responsible seem to delight in placing petty restrictions in our way x I would gladly have led a riot! At first no 1/2 holiday; but later on we were given one x Letter from Daisy x Wrote Mother x Spent evening before the fire in the old dame's kitchen x

11/12/1917 Sunshine at last! But for how long? Still plenty of mud x In morning went to draw remounts; afternoon inspection by Brigadier - Genl Russell x The only thing we got out of it was to have our dinner hour cut short by an hour! x

11/13/1917 This fine weather is becoming monotonous!! Two days in succession with sunshine! and nice & warm too x A few more days like this & our boots will be getting dry - mine have been wet every day for six weeks x Since Sunday there has been a heavy & continuous bombardment towards Epres; tho' we must be 20 or so miles distant this evening we could easily feel the vibrations x Two years today since I left N.Z.

11/14/1917 Foggy day; drizzling rain evening x Letters from Mother (Sept 11) & Putty x

11/15/1917 Fine x Wrote Twinnies x Ordinary routine x A Way They have in the Army: Last November we were issued with one shirt & one pair socks x There has been no issue since x Now it has been read out in orders that if we return an old shirt or an old pair of socks we can obtain another shirt (second-hand) & pair of socks (new) x ! !

11/16/1917 Fine, but dull x Papers (2) from Kit x at football draw game between 11th & 13th x Heavy artillery fire resumed direction Epres x Parcel lump sugar from Mother

11/17/1917 Thick fog all morning; afternoon dull & raw x Football match 1st v 3rd Brigade, won 3rd after hard "go" 6-0 x Australian Band present x My record of "crime" is increasing x Three days ago about a dozen of us were "on the mat" for being late on parade; not our own fault tho': parade with picquet for 2 nights x Today six of us committed the heinous offence of being caught in a coffee shop during parade hours x "Sentence" of the O. [O]: (drawing encircled by "O") 3 extra picquets x Awful !! Letter from Annie (13th) & paper Aunt Amy x

11/18/1917 Fine, but dull x Had all day off x Wrote Mother x Letter from Aunt Amy (Nov11) x "D" sub beat "B" sub football 6 - 0 x 1/c picquets x At soccer - 13th beat Tommy ASC 2-1 x

11/19/1917 Fine; dull x Football B team 13th drew in 4th Howitzer - 3-3  
x Wrote Billy Simpson x We are likely to move out any day  
now x

11/20/1917 Fine; dull x Football 7th battery 4, 13th 0 x Not much of  
game; winners scoring on call of time x Soccer: 13th 0, 4th  
How. 0 x 1/c picquet x Albert vandoolaeghe. Commine pale-  
faced sparkling brown - eyed This boy - a bright ^ little  
chap of 14 1/2 is a refugee living in our billet with his father &  
friends x He works long hours in the field for 2 frs a day x  
Speaks some English x Tonight he told me his experiences in  
early days war x "One day" he said, me, my father &  
comrade working in field, when Allemands come x We  
crouched (gesture) in stook, " and he continued excitedly,  
Allemand pass within two metres of us!" Allemand no bon! "  
Left Commines 1914, Epres for 17 days, [during] 3 days  
bombardment x Then Popenhinghe, & finally here x Any  
brothers? "One killed in trenches, one prisoner Germany" he  
replied sadly x Sister in Paris x Mother dead 4 yrs x Such is  
sad story of thousands of homeless Belgians & French x Later  
he showed me photo of brothers with the remark "Two bon  
brothers" Latter in frame of cardboard which with evident  
pride he said he made himself x

11/21/1917 Wet day; more slush & mud x Football (2nd team) 13th 6,  
11th 0 x

11/22/1917 Dull forenoon: drizzling rain afternoon & football 11th  
Battery 5, 13th 3 x Not much of a game x Parcel from Annie  
(cakes, handkerchiefs & feet socks) x Jules Buaerss Degnook  
a Hondegheem "1870" frar Hazebrouck Nord, France  
Comisses Ten Brieless Belgique

11/23/1917 Nice day x Letter from Annie x Football: 13th 3 - 4th How. O (2nd team) We are moving out on Sunday, it is said back to Epres sector, and are to be still in the reserve line for a little longer before going into action again x Wrote note to Annie x

11/24/1917 High wind; rain threatening x Moving out tomorrow x News of British success at Cambria x (sic) Trench comforts from Ch/ch Liverpool C'ttee x

11/25/1917 On trek again; reveille 5.30 x Moved off 9, arrived about 2 at Boeschepe on the [Epres] sector x Strong cold wind blowing with a little snow - the first of the season x Our bivvy is made of sandbags, with corrugated iron roof x Soon got fire going, & tonight we are quite cosy x Few showers x During the 3 weeks we have been out of the firing line we have not had a bad time at all x Tonight we are once more in easy sound of the guns, & can see the shells bursting x Understand we are to hold in reserve for about another week before going into action x Wrote Mother x

11/26/1917 Snow in the air x In morning went to baths & had decent wash x Another parcel from Annie - jam tarts, cakes, sweets; buns or feed x

11/27/1917 Rain all last night & most of today x Oceans of mud x Paper from Aunt Amy x Wrote Annie x

11/28/1917 Fine, but dull x Exercising horses morning x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday afternoon x Set out to see football (soccer) match between 3rd Bgde & Middlesex R L. Batt; but failed to find ground x [-----] a hockey match instead between some officers & NCO's (Tommiés) x said to be moving into action at Dickeybush (sic) about 2nd Dec x Letters from Daisy & "Snowy" x Wrote to Miss Thornton x

11/29/1917 Fine, but dull x Letter from Joe; parcels from Miss Thornton (cake) Mother (sugar) & Aunt Amy (shirt & socks) x P.C. to Aunt Amy x The cake was a "bonsor" one, & we had a good feed for supper

11/30/1917 Fine, but dull x Routine work x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday x

12/1/1917 Dull; showery evening x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday x Wrote Joe x Paper from Aunt Amy x

12/2/1917 Ugh! Ground white with snow when we turned out at 6.30 x Very cold x Early morning exercise for horses x Church parade at 9.30 x Marched to building in Boescheepe, (sic) where we had a very enjoyable service x An orchestra of two or three violins & a piano supplied music; & the singing of several well known hymns was done very lustily x The sun was shining brightly, & tho' the wind was keen, the air was very bracing reminding me of a fine winter day in Nelson x Afternoon weather changed to dull & windy with few showers of snow x Wrote Mother



12/3/1917 Cold frosty morning, with plenty of ice; sunny day, but not strong enough to melt the ice x Present orders are that we move out on Wednesday x

12/4/1917 Nice sunny day, with exception of snow shower in forenoon x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday afternoon & went for a tramp to top of a hill commanding grand view of surrounding country x I met a Yank, who was "half-seas over" x Had a bit of a yarn to him; & when we were about to part he wanted to press on me a couple of francs x Told him we didn't do that sort of thing in N.Z x He eventually became very annoyed & when I still persisted he threw the two francs on the ground, turned on his heel & lurched away with the angry remark that he wouldn't ----- (sic) speak to me again when he met me x Two Tommies were passing at the time, & they made no bones about my invitation to pick up the money x Christmas parcel from home arrived; backsheesh parcel from Ch/ch Lvple C'ttee (Mrs Ballantyne (Riccarton) x Going into action again tomorrow x

12/5/1917 Moved off 8 am, to W. L. near Epres x Gun position on Menin road x Came on in rear of Battery i/c rear party x Big camp hereabouts, & plenty of bombing we will doubtless get x Frosty morning; lovely sunny day, but had to keep moving to remain warm x Owing to mess - up among the "Heads" (who should know better) we came here a day too early, & found the outgoing Battery still in the lines, consequently some inconvenience re sleeping quarters x While on trek passed thro' Renescalt & Oomdroof (?) x (sic)

12/6/1917 Hard frost: sunny day x Getting settled in new position x We have two mess huts for sleeping accomdtn; also some bivvies x Plenty of bombing in vicinity at night; about a dozen searchlight (sic) going x Parcel from Blanche & Aunt & Uncle (cigarettes chewing gum, cocoa, lozenges) x Thanks x

12/7/1917 Fine; but dull; ground thawing x Received notice to report at R.C. for leave; have to leave England again on 24th! Will try to get a few extra days x Went over to YMCA marquee evening; concert, a number of British West Indian natives assisting x Rain later on x Ground very muddy x

12/8/1917 ( 8.30pm In YMCA Hut at Poperinghe, waiting for leave train to depart at 1.38 am tomorrow for Calais) Left camp at midday & reported at Div. Details Camp x Some bally old fossil inspected us & told us we were the dirtiest lot he had seen, & said we were a disgrace to the army! These chaps with soft jobs have to do something to justify their existence x He made the "Dinks" parade again x Left camp 6.30 walked to Poperinghe about 1 1/2 hrs x Going to be a long night x Fine day, but dull x

12/9/1917 Arrived Calais 5.30, & at 6.30 marched thro' city to R.Camp; later on marched to boat, leaving at 11.45, arriving Dover a little over an hour later x Long wait in train & reached Vic. Station 5.15, arriving Ilford 7 x Raining all way x Kent country reminded me very much of Nelson with its hop fields, orchards, nurseries, etc x Calais still retains a touch of English style, & is the most English looking city I have seen in France with its clean street & buildings x Leave warrant etc x On tube to Lvpl St an elderly chap asked me what part of NZ he came from x Told him x He was an old New Zealander, one of Gabriel Gully's pioneers x He went to Nelson from coast in the old Charles Edward Simpson was his name x

12/10/1917 This morning went to town with Annie & Mrs Hawthorn & had jolly good day finishing up at Haymarket Theatre in "General Post" x Had a great tuck in for dinner - soup, fried oysters, roast beef, spuds, cauliflower & apple tart (encore) tea & bun x Just took edge off my appetite x Went over Selfridges, & wrote note to Mother, Twinnies & Howie x Spent hour at pictures before going theatre x Called at High [Comsnss] x Sent telegramme Aunt Amy x Only little rain in morning x A great joy to be among civilisation again x Saw Scott's Monument, Napier, Pitt x

12/11/1917 Fine day x In morning had phisog (sic) taken with Annie x In afternoon went to city & saw Annie's friend off x Back to Ilford 6pm x Wrote Joe a note x

12/12/1917 Into the city in morning: went to N.Z. Records & obtained 2 days extension of leave; then to club, got letters x On to bank, N.Z. where some money was awaiting me, thank heaven x Sent Mother Xmas cable x Caught 11.50 train Euston for Colwyn Bay, arriving there at 6 x Rain part of journey x WOP Letter from Maud; answered same

12/13/1917 Fine day; walked about town & environment; very pretty x Letter from Dick x While walking thro' Colwyn Bay today by myself a couple of little girls turned to look at me when one of them said in quite a loud voice: "Oh, isn't he lovely!" Picture my embarrassment x Must have been my swanky coat & hat I was wearing! Pictures in evening x

12/14/1917 Wrote to Mother, & p.c's to Twinnies, Pickles, Effie, Kit x Walk along "prom" morning; afternoon rather [relaxing]; write to Howie x Off to Manchester in morning x

12/15/1917 Left Colwyn Bay 8, arriving Manchester 10.30 x Met by Dick & Jack x Picked out Jack from his photograph x Raining x Had a walk thro the city, & coffee with Dick; left Dick at 11 & met him at 12 x Went to YMCA & sent p.c's home x Fine city 1,000,000 pptr; town hall magnificent bldg (in Albert Park x Statue Duke Wellington Queen Vic x Took train from city to N Southgate x Made very welcome by Maria; soon felt at home x Went to Chorlton with Dick to buy butter & margarine went to five places; all the same - none x Saw long lines of the poor looking class outside butchers & grocers x Chorltonville a garden town & very pretty; picturesque houses, nice footpaths, trees etc x ---- Both in England & Scotland frequently see notes in shop windows "no sugar"; all tea sold out" "no butter today"; "no margarine today!"

12/16/1917 Snowing x Had walk round with Dick in forenoon; afternoon Holly, Jack & George came to see me x Had jolly pleasant four hours x

12/17/1917 Left Victoria Station at 9.40 arriving Edinburgh 4.45 x Route thro hills barren & rugged; plenty of snow x On way to station saw lark in Albert Sq x Staying at Caledonian x Think I am going to have a good treat x Went to ["Hanagal Goods"] in evening x

12/18/1917 In morning went to the Castle; xxx John Knox's house; St Giles Cathedral & Holyrood; very interesting x Edinburgh appears to to me to be an "eminently respectable" city x Statue of Joh (sic) Burns very fine one x Bought short- bread at [McLinetts] in Princes St x Good x Left by 2.10 for Aberdeen, arriving at 6; now awaiting a feed x Passed over Forth & Tay bridges x Fleet lying at anchor in Forth; great sight x Passed thro' Dundee x Staying at Station Hotel x In evening went to "panto" "Old King Cole" in His Majestys theatre x Very good; in parts screamingly funny; staged with good effect x Stayed at Central Station Hotel x xxx The lower portion of the House was used in the early days as a goldsmith's shop x

12/19/1917 (Saw university) 19 Wed Very interesting time in Aberdeen  
x Walk thro' city; and then by tram out to Don River of Don,  
passing over the Brig o' Balgownie x Some fine looking  
kirks; shops not so bad x Left by express for Glasgow 2.35 x  
The journey for some distance ran parallel with sea coast;  
many deep ravines in cliffs; could imagine smugglers  
hereabouts in the "bad old days x Arrived at Glasgow at 6.30  
after jolly pleasant run x Staying at Central Station Hotel;  
rather magnificent place x After dinner went to see Dick  
Whittington at Alhambra x & Smoking is prevalent among  
the audience in the theatre in the U. K x "Panto" beautifully  
staged & not a bad show at all x Commenced at 6.45; early  
starts seem to be the custom in Scotland's theatres x Having  
a look round tomorrow.

12/20/1917 Rotten weather - snow & sleet most of day x Had a run about  
the town; but no verandahs on shops, so did not stay out  
long x Wrote note to Mother, & sent several p.c's x

12/21/1917 Another foggy day x Took train passed the Docks, saw submarine & destroyer in dry dock x Had a walk thro the streets looking at the shops x Caught the 12.50 to York, passing thro Edinburgh & New Castle x (sic) Soon after leaving Glasgow, country covered with snow; a few peeps of sunshine added to beauty of scene x After leaving Edinburgh passed along East Coast of England, catching glances of sea: , also pretty country lanes etc x Saw what looked like an old castle x Very pleasant run reaching York about 10 x Had a feed & off to bed x London tomorrow x

12/22/1917 The most interesting day of my trip x Fine day x Went thro' York Minster x Magnificent old pile, & reeking with history x Then on thro' the quaint old town, & narrow street x Also went over seve a ruined church, thro' museum x A stone wall surrounds the city, entrance to which is gained by archways x Had long tram ride before catching train which left at 4 - 1/2 hr late x A day I will always remember x Reached London during night; met some chaps x Slept at club, as could not get tube to Ilford x Two air raid warnings; machines failed to reach London x



12/23/1917 Arrived back at Annie's during morning x Afternoon went to Walton-on-Thames & met several friends x Back to Ilford midnight x At Annie's found two Nelson chaps, who had called with some neighbours x Harvey (Begg & Co) & Percy (Sargood) x [came sole] Pettit

12/24/1917 Annie took me to town today x Shopped amid huge crowd at Selfridges x Worse than a "push" at the front x In afternoon went to "Inside the Lines" at the Apollo x Jolly good x Evening spent at a neighbours; pleasant time x Dull day x Tubes & street crowdled x

12/25/1917 Christmas Day Feeding most of the day x In morning went with Annie Bert & family to church; then a walk before dinner x Afternoon went to children's party at Mr A. Greens & had jolly time until 9 x I attempted to catch last train for town, intending to stay at Club; but missed the train, so we went back to Ranelagh Gdns Beautiful fine fresh day x Had a lovely fat turkey for dinner, & enjoyed it immensely x Plenty to eat everywhere, & I made the most of my last day in England x Annie gave me for a (sic) Xmas present a jolly useful holdall, which I was in need of, my own having been destroyed by shell fire x Also pair mittens from Desmond x Just like home to find presents on your plate on Christmas morning x Have spent the last four "Xmas Days in different countries! 1914, N.Z; 1915 Egypt; 1916 France; 1917, England 1918 --- ?

12/26/1917 Caught 6.6 train to Lvp'l Street; the underground to Victoria St x Bert came with me x Left Vic. St at 8.30 x Very sorry to leave x Arrived Dover 11, x No boat today, so we were marched to barracks (once a hotel) to stay until tomorrow x In afternoon spent rather miserable two hours trying to find something in this uninteresting town to interest me x Sooner we get back to the line now the better I will be pleased x In evening tried to read in YMCA room x Sent note to Annie & pc's to Mother, Aunt Amy & Dick Ormond x

12/27/1917 Slept last night on boards; two blankets over me; very cold x Went to bed about 7 feeling rather miserable at the good things I was now missing after my holiday jaunt x Up at 6; piece bread & cold meat for breakfast x Good deal of snow during night, & place white this morning x At 7 marched down to boat, leaving at 8.30 & arriving at Dover Calais 10.30 x Marched to rest camp, where we have to stay until tomorrow x Can't say I am feeling cheerful x & the sooner now I am back with the boys the better I will be pleased x Heard from a chap that since I have been away a shell landed in one of our bivvies at the guns & killed everyone in it - five in number, including three of the same gun detachment as myself - Sgt Piper, Bomb Hill & Gnr Odey; also Smith & Rasmussen x Very sorry to hear of it x There are several inches of snow on the ground, & showers of it have been falling throughout the day x

12/28/1917 Entrained at Calais about 11 for Poperinghe, arriving there at 3.30, and at camp at 5 x The whole country has several inches of snow over it x Very cold x Glad to be among the boys again now that my leave is over x What a happy time I had! Found letters from Mother (Sept 17-23-2 Oct) Twinnies, Pickles (2) Howie Uncle Geo Cousin Blanche; Effie; Ray; & Aubrey also papers from Kit, Effie & Mother x Letter also from Billy Simpson x

12/29/1917 Started work again x A very "hard thing" x Fine day; Snow everywhere x [ooo] Sent p.c.s & ack all letters received yesterday x Going up to the guns with a working party at 3 tomorrow morning x also p.c to Harry Finney & Miss Garlick x 9.30 Liverpool

12/30/1917 Up 3 am to take working party up to gun position x Two hours walk x Back at 4 pm x The Menin road, over which we went has been, & is continually "slathered" up terribly x Overturned & destroyed wagons & timbers every few yards for over a mile x The surrounding country is utter desolation x Received a plum pudding from Miss Ward x Many thanks x Going up to the guns tomorrow x Sent p.c. to Annie x

12/31/1917 A P Pool Wellington have R. Scott Wellington J. A.

McGavin Wellington (Nelson) In company with these three chaps I spent the last night of the old year at the guns on Menin Road x The day has been cold, a keen wind blowing off the snow making us feel the need of all our warm clothing x A quiet day, so far (6pm), tho' at the moment Fritz is sending a few over near our position x From 9 to midnight I have to guard ammunition "down the road" a bit x At present we are all yarnning in our bivvy smoking cigars which Bert gave me while in Blighty x Am thinking of all at home, & of my close friends x Hope they will all have a happy One x ..... After midnight: Just back from guard x Saw the old year out to the accompaniment of a short sharp stunt from Fritz x We also sent him kindly greetings! May we all be in good old New Zealand next New Year x Kia ora! x Mafeesh 1917!

1/1/1918 The first thing that greeted me this morning when I awake was "There's a cablegram for you Spear" x Eccus had sent me greetings x Thanks, same to you! We are in a bivvy built at rear of a Hun pill-box x This morning a Y.M.C.A. man visited us, bringing "buckshee" cigarettes, chewing gum, chocolate, & two hams x A [Cinema] man also took some "movies" of some of the boys x I was on duty at the guns at the time so "missed" being "took" x Fine day, tho' cold wind x Such a dreary stretch of country hereabouts; shell-torn ground, stunted & blackened tree trunks, & all the impedimenta of war lying everywhere x Both sides exchange "greetings" fairly persistently all day x Night so far quiet x I have now commenced my third diary x Pc's to cousin Blanche & Betty Simpson x

1/2/1918 Posted letter to Mother, & p.c's to Eccus & Miss Ward (ack. plum pudding) x Warm day; thawing slightly x Quiet day; only little artillery fire x Also sent p.c. to Miss Angus x Our guns are right out in the open, with no shelter at all x Just off Menin road, near Westhoek Ridge x

1/3/1918 Snow during night x Fine sunny day x Aerial activity x Fairly active all day

- 1/4/1918 Fine x Good deal aerial activity; several fights x Only moderate artillery fire x Fritz went mad on one or two occasions & "strafed" hard on his usual targets x We have some good places to skate on; ice very thick x
- 1/5/1918 Dull, but fine & warmer x Quiet day x Salvaged ammunition x
- 1/6/1918 Fine x Just the usual kind of day; some artillery fire, a few aerial combats; & very cold x Carting ammunition most of the day x Wrote Mother (recounting my trip as far as Edinburgh 20p), & also p.c. to Mother, Auntie & Effie; also some photos of Caledonian Hotel x
- 1/7/1918 Ground thawing; very sloppy x Rather quiet until about 5.45 when Fritz heavily shelled our position x I was just going on duty at the gun at the time; having to sleep in a bit of a bivvy x Our candle was blown out several times by concussion, & heaps of dirt fell on to & into the doorway x However, no one was hurt, but I think the three of us were wondering where the "next one" was going to fall x No Shells are still (9.30) coming over, but are safe for us x Letters from Mother (Nov Oct 29 - Oct Nov 4) & cousin Blanche, Xmas card from Ray, & p.c. from Cora Mac x My home letters between Oct 2 & 29 have not yet turned up x Wrote Annie, Dick & Maud

1/8/1918 Driving snowstorm all morning x Bitterly cold wind x  
During Fritz's "strafe" last night of our position two gun pits  
were blown in x Wrote Cousin Blanche x On duty guns all  
night x Finished reading "The Beloved vagabond" (Locke) x

1/9/1918 Morning fine; afternoon another driving snowstorm: had to  
work in it for some time x No bon! Guns on both sides rather  
quiet x We are building reserve gun pits in our "spare time"!

1/10/1918 At 2 this morning we had to turn out on response to an  
S.O.S. call from our infantry x For the next  $\frac{1}{4}$  of an hour we  
gave Fritz something to "keep him thinkin' x" Heavy thaw in  
night & at daylight very little snow to be seen x Heaps of  
mud & slush in its place x Artillery fairly lively all day x  
Wrote Nell & Aunt Amy x

1/11/1918 Still thawing, with mud & slush on the increase x Usual  
"strafing" going on x Yesterday the artillery wagon lines  
were shelled x About 60 chaps were killed & wounded; also a  
fair number of horses x Not surprised, as the whole division is  
camped in a small area, with stables & mess huts to show the  
airmen where we are x Only one man (Jim Laybourne) of our  
battery was wounded (slightly); one horse killed & two  
wounded x Fritz used his "toot suite" or "rubber - guts" gun -  
which has a very long range x On duty at guns all night x



1/12/1918 Few showers of sleet; otherwise fine x usual artillery activity x Filling sand-bags all day; I estimate on a fair basis, that I have about put half - of Belgium in bags x Letter from Uncle Geo (Jan 5) & parcel from Misses Elsie and Eileen Hair (hold-all, just what I needed, as my other was blown up); & Mrs Blackburn (tin butter, tin raspberry jam, two tins tobacco, tin lollies & pkt handkerchief x Especially was the butter appreciated x Thanks my kind friends x Wrote to Mrs Blackburn & Misses Hair; & p.c. to Ray x

1/13/1918 Missing Oct mail arrived: Three from Mother (Oct 8-15, 22) Kit (2) Pickles (2) Koi, Ray, Brian Bree, Annie, Mrs Blackburne; & paper Aunt Amy x Jolly glad to get them x Fine day; heavy artillery fire part of day x Wrote to Mother 14p (trip up to time left Glasgow) x Going down to W.L. tomorrow x Further information re shelling of our W. L. on 10th show that casualties numbered 103, of whom about 17 were killed x Worst smack up the artillery have yet had on the one day x

1/14/1918 Gun crews changed over, & I went to the W. L. x Snow during night & part of morning x Had two hours walk in snow; we took a "short cut" & found it the longest way round x Letter from Aunt Amy; Wrote Aunt Amy, & pc's to Kit, Koi, Matia, Pickles, & Cora Mac, & Ray x Looked up Toby Anderson x

1/15/1918 Rain during last night, & most of today; very heavy all evening x We are swamp- literally wallowing in mud & slush over our boot tops x Enough to give a man the "hump" x This time last year the ground was white with snow & frozen as hard as rock x We prefer these conditions - however bitter the cold - to living in mud x C'est la guerre! x Wrote "Pickles" & Daisy x

1/16/1918 Heavy rain & gale in night, lasting until best part of forenoon x

1/17/1918 Rain & snow, snow & rain x Lovely! Wrote to Annie & Koí x

1/18/1918 No rain, but still oceans of slimy mud x Played 13th Battery football draw - no score x Did some washing & made an attempt to darn socks - a jolly nuisance x Hereabouts there are no civilians to attend to these things - we ought to have some "waacs" attached to us for this purpose x While riding a "donk" from water today the brute lay down in the mud & sent me into the thick of it x A little more mud added to what I was already covered in did not matter much x We are pigging it & no mistake x Parcel from Annie - cakes, apples, oranges x Bon! Many thanks Annie [-] Ack. same x

1/19/1918 Hurrah for Ireland! Sixteen letters from NZ. today x Such a feast I had reading them after tea x Three from Mother (Nov 13-19-26) Kit, Koi, Matia, Pickles (2) Effie (2, & a photo) a long one from Howie, ditto Miss Thornton (& photos) Ray, Putty (& photos) Aunt Kate, Aubrey x Life's worth living once more! Also coupons from Mother & Gert & Mr [Tatton] (per Effie) x Warm day, but oh! the mud! x One of the balloons on our sector got adrift today, but do not know its fate x

1/20/1918 Warm & fine x Wrote Mother detailing my trip up to the time I reached London (16 p) x About 6.30 pm I was ordered to take a man with me & report to Beatty ammunition dump & proceed with another team to Batty position x An all night job x After floundering about in mud for best part of hour, & reporting to various "heads" was informed that train had left two hours before x As no more trains were running during night told to go "home" x More messing up among the "heads" x Forgive them however, as it saved me being out all night x

1/21/1918 Reported sick & sent to No 5 N.Z. Field Ambulance for few days x At a clearing stations met Reg Dodson, also on sick list x Showers during day x The F. ambulance is near Poperinghe x Good tea tonight: bread, butter, pressed tongue, boiled sago, jam, pickles, tea x

- 1/22/1918 Few showers x We are are being well fed in Hospital x Menus today as followed: Breakfast: Boiled sago, fried bacon, tea, bread (wh I made into toast) butter & jam x Dinner: Roast meat, boiled spuds, custard & preserved damsons; bread pudding; jam, tea x Tea: Bread pudding, salmon, tea or coffee, bread, butter jam & pickles x Supper; cocoa biscuits All stuff well cooked x Can do with a lot of this x Wrote to "Boy" x Concert in evening x 30 -32
- 1/23/1918 Showery during night x Finished reading "A change in the cabinet (Belloc) x Commenced What Became of Pam (Baroness v. Hutten)
- 1/24/1918 Fine x Finished What Became of Pam", & com. "The Expensive Miss du Cane" (Miss Macnaughton)
- 1/25/1918 Quite a spring day: warm & sunny x Nice moonlight night x Finished The Expensive ... Cane" x (sic) Commenced "Six 1/2 dozen Indiscretions" (Hélène Gingold") x
- 1/26/1918 Wrote Mother (16p) concluding a/c trip Blighty x Concert at night; not bad x Going back to my unit tomorrow x Feeling better x
- 1/27/1918 Discharged from hospital x Driven to Reinforcement Camp, from where walked to our horse Wagon Lines x Letter from Dick; paper Aunt Amy x Misty day x Y.M.C.A. service evening x Band in attndnce x (sic)
- 1/28/1918 Parcels from Effie (cig tobacco, tin choc) & Ray (tin cigs), & papers from Aunt Amy & Effie (L Dominion) x Warm sunny day x O/cpl x

- 1/29/1918 Wagon Lines shelled this morning x After three shells came over us got the harness clean x One shell fell in 11th Batty lines, but fortunately an inspection was being held & horses & men were not in stables x Returned to stables after being absent about  $\frac{3}{4}$  hours x No damage to 13th lines or personnel x Warm sunny day x
- 1/30/1918 Fine warm spell continues x Wrote Effie x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday x Read "Delilah of the Snow (Bindloss) Char Met Charlie Hamilton - first time for over a year x
- 1/31/1918 Raw, misty day x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday x 13th & 11th junior teams (football) draw, no score x Reading "Literary Studies" (Walter Bagehot) x Concert YMCA evening, 1st Canterbury Band assisting x
- 2/1/1918 Anniversary Nelson City x Dull raw day x 1/c picquet x Wrote Cora Mac
- 2/2/1918 Fine sunny afternoon x Football 3rd Brigade beat 1st Brigade - 8-3 x Concert by 1st Canterbury Band Y.M.C.A.
- 2/3/1918 Dull but fine x Church parade morning; padre Young x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday afternoon L X beat R X football 8-0 x Looked up John Reid at Walker's Camp in afternoon x Evening service YMCA
- 2/4/1918 Fine x Letters from Mother (photo Holly) (Dec 2) Pickles, Aunt Kate, & Miss White x O/cpl x Wrote Mother & p.c. Miss White x

- 2/5/1918 Fine; dull x Letter Aunt Amy x In evening went to "Forty Thieves" by N.Z. divisional Entertainers with J. Reid x A wash-out as soon after start the lights went wrong & couldn't be fixed up x
- 2/6/1918 Summary from Harry Finney x Shower during night; fine day x "Pierrots" with J Reid in evening x Very good x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday
- 2/7/1918 Showery x P.c to Annie x Reading "The Salt of the Earth" (Lafargue) x Sent "York Minster" to Mother x
- 2/8/1918 Drizzling rain x Usual routine x Have had a very sore throat for several days x
- 2/9/1918 Letter from Annie x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday, Football 3rd Brigade beat 2nd Brigade for divisional championship by 10-3 x High wind blowing but on whole good game, with some fine bouts of passing x Big crowd, including "heads", seated on G.S. wagon; band also in attendance x Evening YMCA Hut, given by N.Z. Masons, opened by Gnrl Russell; Gnrl Johnson also present x Band concert & few vocal items x Not a bad turn out x Fine day x
- 2/10/1918 Wrote Mother x Church parade YMCA hut morning; Brig Gnrl Russell & Genl Johnston present;  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday afternoon x Song service YMCA evening x Met Joe Dickson & Norris x Going up to guns tomorrow morning in teams to move guns x "Mail" from Mother x

2/11/1918 Up 4.30 to take 8-horse team to gun position Menin Road to move guns to a new position x A road which had been made to take out the guns was heavily shelled yesterday afternoon & the shells hit the road fair in centre x This made our work very difficult & hard x However our team shifted two guns & got home at 2.30 x Only cup of tea & biscuit since early morning x Not much shelling going on x In evening 4th Infy Brgde gave very good concert in YMCA hut x Parcel wedding cake from Howie x Our gun "D" was brought down to go to ordnance, so we (D sub) will not go into active for a day or two x During my trip today I saw evidence of preparations we have made in case of a retirement x Hundreds of reserve gun emplacements & small bivvies have been made; many places have been barbed wired; & other strong points made x Along a certain road many big guns; one named Johnnie Walker x

2/12/1918 Fine; showers during night x Lecture by Dr McGreuer (?) (sic) (Professor Edin University) in YMCA Hut on Epres (eep) x Very interesting; large crowd x The Dr G a bit of a humourist, & told some good stories x Wrote Annie x

2/13/1918 Wet day x Band concert YMCA evening x Reading "The Soul of a Bishop (Wells)

2/14/1918 Dull x Plenty of mud x

2/15/1918 Parcel from Aubrey; letter from Annie; papers Auntie & Ray (2) x Fine day; cold night x Pictures YMCA evening x Good deal artillery activity evening x

2/16/1918 Hard frost; beautiful sunny day x The kind of one I used to like going down to the golf links x Pictures YMCA camp x Reading Actions & Reactions (Kipling) x

2/17/1918 Another fine day x Our heavies more active than for some days past x Went to see Hamilton x Song service YMCA evening x P.c Uncle Geo x

2/18/1918 Fine spell continues x Wrote Mother x

2/19/1918 Fine x Wrote Joe x 2nd C'bury Band concert YMCA evening

2/20/1918 Rain x Heavies active x

2/21/1918 Fine x Papers from Kit & Effie (Dominion) x sharp stunt this morning x

2/22/1918 Rain during night & dull dull x up at 3 am to report to guns; back dinner time x Canadian concert bands YMCA evening x Had a walk along Epres-Roulen railway line; knocked about; plenty of pill boxes; etc x

2/23/1918 Fine x Letter from Annie x concert YMCA by "Eyes Right" party (from N.Z. base); very good; crowded

2/24/1918 Letter Aunt Amy x Fine x Our guns moved out of action today; but we are going in again in a day or two x The last position has been an easy one, especially for the R & C X's, the L X were sniping from the Epres - Roulen railway x Wrote Mother x YMCA service in evening x "Bucksheesh" parcel Ch/ch Liverpool fund (tea milk, tongues, salmon, handkerchiefs, boot lace) x Ack. same x



- 2/25/1918 Fine; nothing much doing x
- 2/26/1918 Showery x About 9 pm orders came to me to go into action at once x Bit of a bustle x Our gun was going in, but at last moment it had to be sent to ordnance, so I did not go up x  
(Note: From here onwards to March 4 my diary was written up some days later)
- 2/27/1918 Reported sick, ordered stay in bed x
- 2/28/1918 In bed x Letters from Mother (up to end Dec.) Aunt Kate, Kit (2) Pickles (2 & photos) Matia, Harry Finney, Ray x
- 3/1/1918 Taken to hospital - No 3 Canadian C.C.S; pneumonia x
- 3/2/1918 Snowing x
- 3/3/1918 Transferred to No 54 London General Hospital x At Aubengue (near Boulogne) Red x Train journey of some nine hours x A "Tommy" died in our ward on way down & was taken off at Amiens x
- 3/4/1918 Well fed & looked after x But fed up of hospital life x
- 3/5/1918 D----- (sic) monotonous! x Wrote notes Mother
- 3/6/1918 Up for the first time x Arrayed myself in an awful- looking suit of blues - pants about 10 sizes too big, tunic ditto ditto too small x Red tie, & red handkerchief to match x Almost fancy myself back in civil life! The beach is not far off & hope to get there soon x Hospital on sand hills overlooking x Decent concert by some ladies from Boulogne x Wrote Aunt Amy x

- 3/7/1918 Putting in time! Concert at night x Nice sunny day x
- 3/8/1918 Same as yesterday, minus the concert x Read "Salt of the Sea" (Morley Roberts) x
- 3/9/1918 Sunny day x Lecture by a Professor (Waring (?)) of London University on "Life in a mediaeval (sic) town" x Very interesting; Described the life in England in 13th Century x Read "The Right Stuff" (Ian Hay); very good x
- 3/10/1918 Sunny day x Transferred to 25 General at Hardelet x Taken there in an ambulance; passed thro' Boulogne on way x Pleasant drive, & is said to have been a favourite spot of King Ed. in peace time x The villas are charming & picturesque, tho' most of them are not occupied at present, with exception those used for hospital x Very fine tiled prom running along sea front in straight line for about 1/2 mile x Steamers, war ships & sailing craft passing along quite close inshore all day x Beach only couple mins. from hospital, we are allowed on it practically all day x Went church evening (Ch of E. service) x
- 3/11/1918 Another beautiful day; spent most of it on seashore x Pictures at night in church army hut x
- 3/12/1918 Glorious day; lolled about on beach x Wrote Mother x Concert in evening; very good orchestra x
- 3/13/1918 More sunshine x Met Sister Dement, & had good yarn about Nelson x Watched polo match on beach in evening x Read "Sixes & Sevens" (O. Henry) x

- 3/14/1918 Rain during night; day rather dull & cold x Given an Australian Red X Bag containing comb, have brush, toothbrush, toothpowder, shaving & toilet soap, shaving brush, white handkerchief, writing paper & envelopes, pencil - a very useful "bag" x Wrote Annie x
- 3/15/1918 Sunshine x Reading "A Knight on Wheels" (Ian Hay); good x
- 3/16/1918 Letter Aunt Amy; ack. same x Fine day x Reading ["Sedan"] x
- 3/17/1918 Fine x Church morning & evening x
- 3/18/1918 Glorious day x Wrote Mother x & p.c. to Pickles x
- 3/19/1918 Fine but dull x Letter from Aunt Amy, Annie, Jack Reid N.Z. War Cont. Assn. Concert in evening (very good) x Wrote J Reid & Mrs Blair x
- 3/20/1918 Rain during night, but glorious day; spent most of it on beach x Parcel from Kit x
- 3/21/1918 Letters from Mother (Jan 7-14) Kit, Pickles (2) Matia, Howie, Uncle Jack, Huí Harrison x Fine, but foggy at time x Concert in evening by an English party - quite good x Parcel Annie x A couple of S. Army padres - once of Nelson - came around today distributing "bucksheesh" x weather foggy x

- 3/22/1918 Foggy x Wrote Kit & [V] x Papers from Kit & parcel sugar & tea from Mother x Lecture on French Revolution" by Rev. Chaddock - very interesting x A N.Z. Sgt came round distributing "backsheesh" articles to New Zealanders - I got 2 pkts cigs, writing pad, shaving soap, 2 white handkerchief's, lead pencil & tooth paste x
- 3/23/1918 Foggy in morning, but cleared up in afternoon & turned out beautiful evening ( moonlight) x Fritz came over & "archie's" were busy x It is said that a bomb dropped on a hospital & caused severe casualties x Reported 2 planes brought down x Being discharged from Hospital on Tuesday x Papers ("Mails Colonist & Summ") from Kit x
- 3/24/1918 Glorious day; church morning & evening x Wrote Ray & Annie x News from [the] front not too good; Germans apparently [meeting] with some success x
- 3/25/1918 Rather cold wind & dull sky x Wrote Mother & p.c. Aunt Amy x
- 3/26/1918 Discharged from Hospital & sent to Base at Etaples x All the way along coast one vast hospital area & base camp; must be thousands of men hereabouts x Cold cloudy morning, but later on fine day x In evening had a long walk round camps x the wounded from the Somme are already down here x

3/27/1918 Ca Medically examined & boarded x Dr Pettit examining officer x Entertainment by Waacs in S. Army hut evening x Plenty of recreation & [Cinema] huts are provided, each denomination seemingly being represented x Troops & ambulance trains with wounded continually passing thro' x Went Etaples village evening with Jock [Burnside] x Dirty place x especially round the fishing quarters x Had eggs etc at YMCA x Had to wait [devil] time to be served x

3/28/1918 Fine, but cold x Walk round camp x

3/29/1918 Showery morning; fine rest day x Met several Nelson chaps x

3/30/1918 cold, with showers x Town patrol at night x Reading for second time "Last days Pompeii" x

3/31/1918 Reported sick with boil on thigh & gathered [big toenail] x Admitted to camp hospital, & sent on to 24 General; full up, & sent on & admitted to 46 Stationery x Wrote Mother & Sister Dement x Fine day x Service (CE) in hut in evening x Padre nothing startling x

4/1/1918 Hail shower night; day sunny x Wrote Annie & Aunt Amy x

4/2/1918 Nothing doing x Fine x

4/3/1918 Few showers; wrote Dick x

4/4/1918 Dull & showery x Wrote Pickles x

4/5/1918 Fine, but dull x Read "The Crimson Azaleas" (Stackpoole); pretty story of Japan x

- 4/6/1918 Fine x Had a walk "down the road" & met a lot of our chaps (artillery) who had just come back from Blighty x Read "By Stroke of the Sword" (Balfour) story of adventures "Spanish Main" x Rather interesting x
- 4/7/1918 Beautiful sunny day x In evening went to Military Church (C E) x Small pipe organ & choir x Anthem "Praise ye the Lord" very good x Good sermon, singing x
- 4/8/1918 Dull x Read "The Faith of Men" (Jack London) x
- 4/9/1918 Same old thing x Having a jolly good time in hospital x
- 4/10/1918 Whist drive in our ward x Jolly enjoyable x The Sisters provided supper & prizes x Supper: egg & sardines sandwiches; jellies, custard & fruit, & cocoa x Bon! Helped nurses prepare the good things x At the end of we gave the ladies 3 big cheers x Wrote Mother
- 4/11/1918 Rain morning, nice afternoon x Had walk round the locality x Read "The Keeper of the Door" (Ethel Dell); don't like it as well as her others x Parcel of tea, sugar & sweets from Mother x
- 4/12/1918 Lovely day x Letter & razor blades from Aunt Amy x Probably going out of hospital tomorrow x Rather sorry, as have had very happy time here x Made morning & afternoon tea with Mother's parcel x Good x Wrote Aunt Amy x

4/13/1918 Letter from Mother (Feb 10) Sister Dement x Part of my N.Z. mail has not yet come to hand x Windy day x Wrote Uncle Jack x

4/14/1918 Cold & windy x Service evening at Military Church x W

4/15/1918 F. Archibald. Cpl No 8987. 6th. Buffs. B. Coy B. E. F. This chap is in hospital with me - a typical cockney regular soldier x Dull day x Letter from cousin Annie x

4/16/1918 [Declaring] war again tomorrow; being discharged from hospital & going to base x (55551 Pte) P. E. Scott 3rd C. I. B. Fine but dull x This is a "digger" who is in the next bed to me x

4/17/1918 J. Morris | 46 Stationary Hospital | \_\_\_\_ | Craigneish | Largs | Ayrshire Nan MacMahon (sister) 24 Atlantic Av (Paddy) Bidford Ireland 46 Stationery Hosp Ida. C Reeve Charnwood (3rd St Hospital Clon ( 4/10/18 Birmingham 46 Stationery Hosp. These Three of the "best" x Went to the base x Paper from Harry Finney x Sister gave me a box of 100 cigs; thanks x

4/18/1918 Rain & very cold wind x Medically examined, & have to go before a board x Wrote to Mother & cousin Annie x Visited 46 Hsptl in evening stopped to concert; jolly good; also had supper x

4/19/1918 Sleet showers; very cold x Inoculated x Read "Chronicles of the Imp" (Farnol) x Not so good as his other works x

- 4/20/1918 Frosty morning; sunny day; cold wind x In evening went to pictures with Henry Jennings; there long walk; supper (hard - boiled eggs biscuits & tea) at Boy Scouts Hut x Shifted to "Physical Jerks" lines x
- 4/21/1918 Decent morning; but cold & windy later in day x In afternoon went to Paris Plage - a tram run of about 20 mins x Rickety old affair x Paris P. a seaside resort, with good promenade x Plenty of shops, & rather nice- looking villas x Had tea at Etaples & later went to service at Military Church x Called in at 46 afterwards x Read "Happy Go Lucky" (Ian Hay ) Ind laren very good; nice & light reading x
- 4/22/1918 Commenced "physical jerks" x Met Putty Hurst & Cock, who came into camp last night x Had good yarn x In evening went with Putty to Etaples & then walk round the camps x Train load Hun prisoners at station x Not at all a bad [stamp] of men x Read "Hon Mr Taveinsh (Jeffrey Farnol)
- 4/23/1918 Fine day, but cloudy x In afternoon I went with Putty to Paris Plage x In evening had a pow- wow with 3 Nelson boys- Harry Pettit, Cock & Putty x
- 4/24/1918 Just had a walk thro' the woods with Putty sooner if had been a nice girl! x [The Longest Cheer' oh] Putty. H6 in evening x Fine, but dull x Read "The Impending Sword" (Vachell); did not care for it x



4/25/1918 Anzac Day; holiday x A special dinner was put on, consisting of beef- steak pie, mashed spuds, plum duff, & custard x In afternoon service was held - hymns, an address, & "Last Post" Reveille played in memory of fallen x Then sports mtg - great success x Plenty of womenfolk present, & races also provided for them x The ossie's won tug-of-war, & V.A.D's beat the Waacs x An aeroplane came over and did a "stunt" x Nice warm day, but cloudy x Letter from Cousin Annie x Met Sister Dement at sports x

4/26/1918 Rotten cold day; not feeling well, & was in bed all day x Note from Annie, telling me two parcels are coming x Good O!

4/27/1918 Foggy morning; rest of day fine Wrote Mother and also to Base P. O. re my missing mail x

4/28/1918 Letters (a month old) from Uncle Geo, Annie, J. Reid x Sent p.c's to all the family x also recd note Bank NZ, re money awaiting me from N. Z x Met Jeff Shallcrass, who came over yesterday x Showed him round Etaples & the camp & went Military Church evening x Church parade morning x Dull, but fine x Fish auction at Etaples in bldg x Fish laid out on floor in pairs; women (all dressed in their best) standing round, & man auctioneer talking fast selling the wares x His tone was more like a the vicar intoning a service, but only much more musical than some I have listened to, & he usually ended up in a crescendo, falling pleasantly to diminuendo x (sic)

4/29/1918 N. Z. letters at last; from Mother (Feb'y 17 - 24) Aunt Kate, Koi, Pickles, Ray (& coupon) Effie (coupon); & Kit x Wrote Bank N. Z. London x Cold windy day x met "Saucy" Bolton x Wrote N.Z. War Assn for Razor Blades x P.c's to Blanche, Miss Thornton & Nell x

4/30/1918 Parcels from Annie (cakes, sweets, eggs, fruit, tin milk, sardines) Miss Thornton (2 prs bon socks & tin 50 cigs); & Putty (tobacco & cigarettes) x A good day day for me! Thanks every- one x Had a good feed, & plenty of smokes x The socks were very acceptable, as I lost all my spare ones when I came went to hospital x Cold cloudy day x [Cinema] at night with Jeff Shallcrass & Henry Jennings x

- 5/1/1918 Cold windy day x usual camp routine x 46 evening x Wrote Annie x
- 5/2/1918 Bathing & washing day x Warm day x
- 5/3/1918 Fine & cloudy x 46 evening x
- 5/4/1918 Letters from Mother (Jan. 22-28 Feby 5) Aunt Kate, Pickles, & Daisy x (5/- coupons Uncle Jack) x Rain during night; fine, but cloudy day x
- 5/5/1918 Rain nearly all day; fine evening x Wrote Mother, Ray & Miss Thornton x S.A. in morning; military church evening; 46 later x
- 5/6/1918 Dull day; had an easy time x Wrote p.c's to Pirani, Mrs Young, Burke & Mrs Angus x Lecture in evening by Capt Davies on "Germany before the War x " Interesting x Tin of sugar from Mother x Letter from Putty x
- 5/7/1918 Heavy rain during night x Fine & showery morning; rest day fine x Lecture in evening in Murray Hut by Dr [Daucey] U.S.A, on Bismarck & the world situation" x Very interesting & informative x [Im's faithfull] all day x

5/8/1918 Nice sunny day - the first for a long time x Parcel (cake fruit sardines sweets) from Annie; letter from [-] x usual routine x Getting tired of the base x In evening the camp police tried to break up a two-up school, & lead to a riot almost x Orderly room windows broken & police chased; all the prisoners let out of the clink; which was then set on fire & made a big blaze x The "Johnnies" went for their lines & lost all their belongings x Two tents also occupied by them were torn down, & the contents thrown into the fire x Quite a nice little break it made in the monotony of camp life! "Lights out" was blown when flames at their height!!

5/9/1918 Another fine day x Looked in at concert Tipperary hut x 46 evening x Read "Old Mortality" x

5/10/1918 Dull morning, fine evening x Concert Lowry Hut

5/11/1918 Nice sunny day; 1/2 holiday x Walk thro' woods in evening x Summary Harry Finney x

5/12/1918 Wet morning; fine afternoon & evening x Church parade morning; evening Military church x Recd razor blades from NZ War C. assn x Wrote Mother x

5/13/1918 Tin sugar & tea from Mother x Ack. razor blades N.Z. W. C. assn, forwarded 7.50 f (5/6) x Rain all day; heavy in evening x Dramatic Recital Ms Lowry Hut by Mr St John (one time of Nelson); had a yarn to him, & he appeared very pleased to meet some one from my town x Last time I saw him recite was in Nelson x Read "the Remington Sentence" (Vachell); good x

5/14/1918 Before Medical Board & marked "Fit" x Letter from Uncle Geo x Fine day; but dull x

5/15/1918 Letters from Mother (Feb 3 (March 5-12-15) Pickles (also soap) Koi, Blanche Miss Ward x Marched into "A" lines x Very hot day x Through the woods evening x Tues p.m. [orders] for 2/6d from Mother x also 2 letters from Aunt Amy x Reading "Face of Clay" (Vachell) x

5/16/1918 Another hot day x Went thro' "gas," an all day job x The instruction includes lectures on the different kinds of gas, & methods to be adopted in countering them x Afterwards, our helmets are tested in the tear gas chamber - after which we go thro' the "real stuff" x 46 evening x Wrote Aunt Amy x

5/17/1918 Another hot day x Wrote Twinnies x Waiting all morning on dental apptmt; put off until tomorrow x Thro woods in evening; also 46

5/18/1918 Still warm x Teeth being fixed up x Going up line in a day or two x Wrote Twinnies; Paper ("Mail") from Effie x The fine weather has induced Fritz to send over aeroplanes daily; he is generally very high, & our "archies" do not harm him x Am writing up my diary in the woods; nice & cool x Birds are singing; aeroplanes droning by; & in distance one hears the pipers x 46 evening

5/19/1918 Another warm day x Wrote Mother x Teeth fixed up x Thro' woods evening x

5/20/1918 wrote note to Nurse Reeve x Last night Hun aeroplanes in large numbers (said to be 60) visited this area & did considerable bombing x A clear moonlight night & the raid lasted about 1 1/2 hrs x Hospitals came in for most damage, over 300 patients & staff being injured or killed x No 46 (where I was recently) was badly hit, there being 70 casualties including 30 killed x Several of the tanks (huts) were blown in, bombs falling in front of three or four of them x Had a look at the damage this evening x No 1 Canadian, St John's, & 24 General also had numerous casualties, some nurses being among the killed x Camps were also bombed, & in one 50 Guards were killed & many more wounded x Two bombs fell in square of Etaples x No damage was caused to railway line or bridges x Reported the three 'planes brought down x At one hospital big marquee set on fire x Our own camp was not bombed, but plenty of shrapnel etc was flying about from the "archies" x Reported that several Hun prisoners who tried to get away were shot x (two words blackened out - indecipherable) Tonight thousands of soldiers from the camps marched into the open & slept there; but no raid

5/21/1918 Hot day x This afternoon all the N.Z.'ers went digging trenches at the hospitals for protection of staff & patients in case air raids x All day yesterday & up till this afternoon was allowed to go by without any action being taken to safeguard those in hospitals x Could easily have been another raid last night x A nice sample of British inaction x If those in authority could have seen any further then their noses trenches would not have been left to be dug after 200 people had been killed & another 800 wounded, as was the case on Sunday x A Canadian nurse was buried this morning, there being a long procession of nurses from different hospitals x Another one was buried this evening x Tonight there was another air raid, but so far as is known, few, if any bombs, were dropped in this area, although the 'planes passed over our camp & we heard loud explosions & saw big glare towards coast x Through woods in evening; after 46 x Put on draft x

5/22/1918 Entrained at Etaples siding 7.30 arriving at Doullens siding about 3 am x Thunderstorm while waiting to entrain x Very pretty country passed thro', greens of varying shades making pleasing vista x Usual scramble to entrain x Just before reaching Doullens Huns dropped bombs in railway grounds, but did no damage beyond shattering the RTO office; killed a Frenchman & two or three Tommies x Got to bed (in huts) about 2.30 x

5/23/1918 Moved off at 9 am for Louvencourt, distance 17 Kilos (10 miles) x Full packs up & rather a solid march x Cool breeze & cloudy sky countered the heat x For some miles passed under leafy avenue trees; at one spot the trees tapered inwards at top & made magnificent nave x Varied green tints & meadows full of buttercups make an ever pleasing vista x Got to details camp 2.30, & later on sent to S.A.A. D.A.C. x Village of usual kind, plenty of French troops about x

5/24/1918 Cold, windy wet day x Re-joined 13th Battery, getting to W. L. about noon x Glad to meet all the boys x In evening walked over to neighbouring village of [Bust] & saw Putty x

5/25/1918 Fine, but on cold side x At gas instruction all day x I/c horse picquet night Wrote to Sisters Macmahon, Morris & Reeve x

5/26/1918 Fine x Afternoon went into Doullens to see about some Officers' Kits x Had a look thro' the city, with we passed thro' on our way from the Somme in 1916 x Heavy stunt during night x Paper from Aunt Amy x



- 5/27/1918 Fine x Sports in evening by Pioneers, flags flying, bands playing & shells falling about a mile away x Heavy stunt last night x The Maoris have made a tennis court in their camp near us x Cricket is played in the various camps - & still the war continues x Fritz from his balloons has good observation; I often wonder what he thinks of it all x
- 5/28/1918 Fine x Usual routine x Wrote Mother x Read "Oh Christina" (Bell) x
- 5/29/1918 Fine; nothing much doing x Cleaning up gear for show x Letter from Annie; Wrote Annie, Scott & Coleman x
- 5/30/1918 All day with fatigue part at show Ground x Easy time & fine & warm
- 5/31/1918 Same job as yesterday x Fine & warm x Heavy stunt this morning early x Read "Turret & Torpedo" x
- 6/1/1918 Ditto yesterday x
- 6/2/1918 Brigade competition for best turn-out, won by 13th Battery, "D" sub winning best sub section in Battery x 13th will represent the 3rd Brigade in D'vsn'l competition tomorrow x Up at show grounds today x Letters from Aunt Amy & nurses Morris & Reeve, papers Mother & Aunt Amy x Very little firing on our sector x Still fine & warm x
- 6/3/1918 King's Birthday x 13th Battery won competition for best turned-out battery in N.Z. Division x At the show all day; big crowd of artillerymen x

- 6/4/1918 Still fine x Ordinary routine x Wrote Mother x Quiet x
- 6/5/1918 Same as yesterday x Cricket match R  $\frac{1}{2}$  Battery. v. L  $\frac{1}{2}$  x L  $\frac{1}{2}$  won x
- 6/6/1918 Wrote Effie & Sister Dement x Fine x Our F.W.L. were shelled today; one man badly wounded; three horses "smacked" x Advice from Bank NZ. re remittance x
- 6/7/1918 Bit of a stunt this morning early x Fine x At cricket our "B" team bet hdqrs by 10 runs x Read "Cherub Devine" (Sewell Ford) Year on since Messines "Stunt" x
- 6/8/1918 Parcel brandy balls from Aubrey; thanks x 13th Battery played 9th; we lost by 8 wkts x Warm x Very heavy stunt by our artillery about 10.30 tonight x Read "Adrift with Toddlers" x
- 6/9/1918 Change in weather apparent x Parcel (tin biscuits) from Miss Ward; letter from Geo x x Wrote Aubrey & Blanche x Read "Minor Operations" ("Taffrail") x
- 6/10/1918 Letters from Mother (March 25 - 31, Apl 8) Aunt Kate, Kit, Pickles, Aubrey, Mrs Angus, Annie x 2/6 pm. from Mother x Fine, little rain during night x Cricket D sub beat C sub (138 to 17) (16)
- 6/11/1918 Fine; fair amount o artillery activity x At cricket D sub & E sub commenced match; D 119 E 69 x Wrote Miss Ward x Ack. tin biscuits; also to Annie x

- 6/12/1918 Played 9th Battery cricket; lost by 8 wkts x Went to their line in g. s. wagon x Fine x Quiet day x Read "Down our Street" (Buckrose); liked it x
- 6/13/1918 Brigade sports to select reps for divisional sports next week x 13th Battery won five firsts, & two seconds - mile, 100yrs, 220, throwing shot, & high jump; 2nd pulling weight & 220 x "D" sub beat E at cricket by 60 runs x Wrote Mother
- 6/14/1918 Went to ordnance at Authieule (16 K.) to bring a gun x Decent trip x Met Noelly Jacobs x Letter from Sister MacMahon x
- 6/15/1918 Fine x Our sub "D" beat "B" in final for cricket by 80 runs x Paper from Mother x
- 6/16/1918 Beautiful morning; afternoon rain squally; fine evening x N.Z. divisional show at Autie; went there & stayed till evening x Church parade morning x Paper from Aunt Amy x Great aerial activity night; few bombs dropping round x
- 6/17/1918 Fine x The last few days Fritz 'planes have been reconnoitering our back areas x Expect he is looking for targets to strafe x
- 6/18/1918 Became a temporary policeman today x Attached to the A.P.M. [at Bus] for a week x Went to pictures in afternoon x Met Joe Dickson x Easy win at cricket over Northumberland Fusiliers x

- 6/19/1918 Heavy rain until afternoon x Crops badly in need of it x Did 3½ hr patrol on horseback with a Gendarme & M.P x Nothing doing afternoon x Letter from Uncle Geo x A beautiful clear, fresh evening x Am sitting (9pm) on a bale of hay; scores of birds in surrounding trees are trilling forth their joyous evensong; recalling vivid memories of N.Z x
- 6/20/1918 Fine, but dull x Patrolling back area & Authie-Bus road morning x Wrote Mother x
- 6/21/1918 Rain early morning & evening x Letters from Mother (Apl 15,23-29) Kit, Pickles Koi, Cora Mac, Aunt Kate, Marion Thornton & p.c. Miss White x Patrolling back areas x
- 6/22/1918 Fine; did nothing all day ("work I mean) x Wrote to Uncle Geo, Pickles, & Sister Reeve x Fine, rain threatening x
- 6/23/1918 N.Z. Division sports at Authie x Big crowd of the boys x Met lot of chaps, including an old schoolmate Tom White x Fine, but fresh breeze x Letters from Sister Morris & Annie; also big parcel from Annie (cake, sardines, milk, eggs, chocolate sweets, cigarettes); bon x Had great feed for supper x
- 6/24/1918 Dull x Patrolled forward area; plenty of big guns (some 12 m) in good positions; deep dug-outs in the chalk hills for men x Three years since I enlisted Trentham camp x
- 6/25/1918 Sunny day x Wrote Annie, letter [V] x Patrolled back area with Louie (a Gendarme) x A hard "doer"

- 6/26/1918 Fine, patrolled Bus-Authie road x Few bombs kicking about during night; our guns active x \ Wrote Sister Macmahon
- 6/27/1918 Wrote Mother x Pleasant day out in the country; "Pinched" a chap for cutting clover x Read "A Man's man" (Ian Hay) x
- 6/28/1918 Pleasant day; duty in back areas x Pictures evening x Rumours of artillery shifting to another sector x Fair amount strafing x
- 6/29/1918 Fine day x Heavy artillery fire night x Papers (2 bundles) from Effie & Paper Aunt Amy x
- 6/30/1918 Louis Perret Gendarme Français 2verfnes (Hautes - (Alpes) (acheux) One of the gendarmes I patrolled with x Fine day; our heavies active all day x Bombs near billet at night x
- 7/1/1918 A very broad "Jock" x Lovely day x A bomb dropped on a billet near [ -- -- the Bud] last night, Killed 4 & wounded 16 Tommies x Returned to Battery x Wrote Sister Morris x "Stunt" at night.
- 7/2/1918 One of the hottest days this year x 3rd Brigade inspected by Massey & Ward, x very formal affair x Bally lot of rot; instead of making such an occasion an informal gathering, & giving the men a chance to have yarn with their representatives straight from NZ x Artillery Pierrots in evening; passed a pleasant hour x Stunt during night; very heavy x

7/3/1918 Big drop in temperature; quite chilly x Our artillery fairly active x Mule sports in afternoon; great fun x Our sub ("D") won the V.C & riding mules backwards second in hurdles; we won most points x Evening played a West Indian Regiment (black) at cricket & got a licking tho' we did not put our senior team against them x Darkies very excited & acted like a lot of schoolboys; the match created much amusement

7/4/1918 Fine x Moving wagon lines & guns tomorrow (w. l. to Couÿen); (sic) guns further north x In my wanderings round this area I have noticed big preparation made in case we have to retire; to huge dug-outs in the chalky banks; gun positions, ammunition dumps; several lines of trenches, telephone wires in deep trenches, & acres of barbed wire x It's a pity to see how the crops have to be damaged to make all these preparations; but there's no help for it x

7/5/1918 Moved to new w. l, taking over from Tommy artillery, they taking ours; as usual, we left a good home to come into an inferior one x Fixing up bivvies all day x Fine x Letters from Aunt Amy (July 2) x Quiet day on our sector x We are now camped on the slope of a hill facing enemy's line; rather deep (for France) gully at foot, along which is being built a light railway x Our guns are just on the outskirts of the village of Fonquevillers x (sic)

7/6/1918 Still "digging in" x Fine x "Diocesan Gazette" from Aunt Kate x Artillery quiet on our f sector x My feet have been bad for several days and are a confounded nuisance x

7/7/1918 Fine x Completed our dug-out (for two): a couple of cupolas, two sheets of iron & old ground- sheets; straw for bedding; ground very hard for digging x Plenty of ventilation; but if rain comes!!! x Wrote Mother x

7/8/1918 Warm day again x Quiet x There are rumours of a "stunt" by us; also that Fritz may attack x The sooner something happens to get this blessed war over the better all will be pleased x "Fed-up" is a mild term to express our wishes x We

7/9/1918 Showers during night & morning; beautiful fine evening x A Fritz airman came over & ran the gauntlet of anti aircraft fire & destroyed a balloon quite close to us x Very pretty sight to see him swooping down on his prey, x Rattle of machine guns elsewhere & noise made by archies x The observers in the balloon jumped out, but not until after Fritz had opened fire on it x By length of the time the balloon burst into flame after Fritz passed over it I fancy one of our own shells set it on fire, some bursting close to it x Parcel of sweets (bulls eye, chocs, fruit drops & toffee) from Ray; très bonne x

7/10/1918 Letters Síster MacMahon & Miss Reeve x Wrote Ray, Hui Harrison & cousin Blanche x Had a bath this morning at Couin x Heavy showers afternoon & evening x One of our balloons broke adrift & another was destroyed by Fritz's aeroplane x Not much artillery fire on our sector; rather heavy during night in the distance x Sent fountain pen to M.W.C.A for repairs x

7/11/1918 duplicate

7/12/1918 Letter Miss Morris x Wrote Fred & Jack Reid x Showery day; fine evening x Walked over to Rossengoll (sic) Farm where YMCA & pictures; N.Z. Infantry camp x

7/13/1918 Few showers x 1/2 holiday x Quiet day x Wrote Fur Aunt Amy x

7/14/1918 Foggy morning; showers during day x Wrote Mother; letters from Annie x O/Cpl x Papers (2) from Amy x



7/15/1918 Fine x Sharp stunt on our front this afternoon x Reported that the "Dinks" went over x Lovely calm evening; went to artillery Pierrots at Rossengel (sic) Farm x Seated now outside my bivvy door, everything calm & peaceful x Not a sound of a gun breaks the quietness x in distance our aeroplanes patrolling; balloons up; chaps dotted about the camps taking things easy; ammunition wagons going up the valley; an early moon showing occasionally thro' cloudy sky x A peaceful setting by what will the morrow bring?

7/16/1918 P.C from Miss Reese (I --I) x (possibly shorthand character) This morning between 6 & 7 occurred a violent thunderstorm. lightning (forked & sheet; very vivid; heavy downpour rain, most of us got wet x During morning forenoon weather cleared & remainder day intensely hot x Our airmen very active, fairly sharp artillery fire in evening x "Buckshee" parcels from Otago & Southland's Women's P. Ass x Mine contained tin cup, milk, sardines, tin lollies, & butterscotch, tin jam, cocoa, & hdkf & small bag x Many thanks kind ladies! Wrote Miss Reeves (ack. parcel)

7/17/1918 Artillery increased in activity during night x Rain early morning, rest of day fine & sultry x Our aeroplanes very active all day, Fritz's "archies" being given plenty of work x One of ours dived down on a balloon & set it on fire; & in that evening one (balloon) drifted from Fritz's lines x Fairly heavy artillery fire most of the afternoon x Up till now (7pm) not one of Fritz's machines have ventured over our lines; ours were flying in squadrons of about five x Going up to guns tonight with pack horses (ammunition) x Washed a shirt (cold water) x About 3.30, am. a Gotha bombing machine had to land in Bayencourt ("over the road" & the 2 Huns, who were made prisoners burnt their machine which landed across a road, completely blocking it x

7/18/1918 Soon after starting out for the guns last evening heavy thunderstorm, vivid lightning & heavy downpour rain came on x Got wet, but warm night x Got back about midnight; quiet trip x Fine today, but heavy shower about 4 x "Putty" looked me up; pleased to see him & have a chat x Artillery rather quiet x

7/19/1918 Fine x Rather quiet day x This evening about 6 several shells fell within a few hundred yards of us, but we were out of the line of fire x Was evidently after Rossengol Farm x & where lot of infantry are billeted x Wrote Miss White x

7/20/1918 Shortly after 3 this afternoon orders come thro' to be ready to move off at 20 mins notice x Soon all was bustle x According to rumours the Huns have with- drawn bout 1000 yds on our sector x Up to present (9pm) we are still here; & it looks as if we will be here for the night; perhaps days x Showery x I/c picquet x

7/21/1918 Wrote Mother & Sister Macmahon x Fine x Song service night Rossingol (sic) Farm x Quiet day x News from South; 17,000 prisoners & 350 guns x Pc's from Miss Reeve x

7/22/1918 Went to guns; & in the evening on to O. Pip until tomorrow x From our O.P. get fairly good view of large tract open country; but to look at it through glasses it looks very peaceful as far as life is concerned x Our heavies active all day x Slept in one-time Hun dug-out; deep down, & several shafts connected; divided into numerous compartments; Huns must have had a good time while living there x Wrote my own & Pickle's initials on a board "way down" into the earth x To our front is Rossingal Wood, which was evacuated by Fritz the other day x

7/23/1918 O. Pip (5 am), Just came on duty for 3 hours x Dull morning; breezy x To the right of our sector Fritz is given (sic) the front line a strafe; two or three shrapnel are bursting to our left x Flashes followed by dark clouds of smoke detonate explosions every second x Our guns are not yet speaking x 5-25. Our 60's are opening out; enemy fire has almost stopped x 5.35: Few "pip squeeks" coming over in the wood on our left; 6.45, quiet x Misty rain coming on; poor visibility 7.5: 9 rounds "pip squeeks" x 7.18: 22 rounds do; bits flying about; switched over to right front x 7.25: switched over 4.2 to just over our "possy" on to the track we use x ..... after breakfast left for guns; went thro' when arrived; stopped in bed for rest of day x Bon! [Pm Quiet day]

7/24/1918 Fine x Wrote to Miss Morris [V] x (possibly shorthand) At 5 pm the Otago Infantry preceded by a barrage, went over, & with loss of 2 killed (including an officer) took about 500 yds trenches x As a blind the heavies put up a smoke barrage on another sector x Our heavies active all day, & night x Fritz quiet x On guard midnight to 2 am x

- 7/25/1918 Few showers x Fritz heavily strafed the trench we took from him yesterday & launched a counter-attack, but he came a "gutzer", losing 30 prisoners x Our guns opened out two or three times during day 2 S.O.S's coming thro' in the evening x Letter from Jack Reid x Wrote Uncle Geo x We are firing at a range of over 6000 x
- 7/26/1918 Quiet day; showery evening x Letter from Aunt Amy x Cigarette famine; more coming up from the W. L. tonight! Improved our gun pits x Read "Much Ado About Peter" (Jean Webster) not a bad yarn for a wet evening x
- 7/27/1918 Rain most of day x Trench turned into a stream & some of the bivvies leaked badly x In evening our heavies fairly active; Fritz quiet x Papers from Mother, Aunty & Effie (bundle "Dominions") came just in nick of time, as I was right out of reading matter x
- 7/28/1918 Dull day x Not much firing x Wrote Mother x In bed most of day x
- 7/29/1918 Fine x Had a stroll thro' what remains of the village of Fonquevilles x (sic) very little firing x

7/30/1918 Fine x Sharp "stunts" during night; Fritz put a few over in our locality x Walked into Bienwillers, once a population 900, now about 200 x Very few houses not suffered from shell fire; still the old people cling to what remains of them, selling eggs etc to soldiers x Bought some lettuce & spring onions from an aged couple; they were having dinner & made me try some new pomme de terres; jolly good x In the evening Fritz again put a few over, but nothing near oo the number we gave him x Wrote Annie x

7/31/1918 A 'baking day - one of the warmest this summer x In the evening a few of us walked into Bienwillers and had a bit of a spée x Received from N.Z.W.C.A my pen & blades & 2

8/1/1918 (At O.Pip) x Warm day; fair amount artillery activity on our part x During morning about 60 of our aeroplanes passed over in one squadron; a very fine sight; the air seemed full of them x Now (8 pm) dozens of ours are over the enemy lines, being well strafed, but never caring x Came up to O. Pip for 3 days x Wrote Kit x Watched a scrap over enemy line between 5 of our airmen & 3 or 4 Fritz's; the enemy were driven home x

8/2/1918 Rain from early morning for rest of day x Went on duty at 3.40 am until 7 x Hun shelling our trenches heavily at time between 5 & 7 am x Rather a quiet day for the artillery x In evening was relieved & went back to the guns x Recd from NZ War C. assn pen etc x -- / -- (4 am Grey sky: to eastward mass of clouds touched by rising sun; a sullen red glow x One of our 'planes over, welcomed by an also anti-shot or two; our lins a lark singing; our trenches being heavily shelled just in front of shouts of men hailing one another in support trenches x Rossingol Wood x Later beautiful sunrise x Then rain for most of day x Ground mist x

8/3/1918 Showery morning x Afternoon went forward to dig gun positions for centre section, in order to allow our guns to enfilade a Hun trench x After working a couple of hours a Hun balloon went up opposite & we had to knock off for the day x Calm evening; our airmen very busy x

8/4/1918 5th Anniversary England's entry into war x Wonder how many more anniversaries we will "celebrate" in this country x Fine; digging gun pits x Rather a quiet day x Letter from Annie & paper from Aunt Amy x In the evening Fritz went "mad" & strafed in our vicinity x

8/5/1918 Gun crews changed over & I went to the W. L. x Fine morning, but showery rest of day x Had a bath & obtained a change of underclothing x

8/6/1918 Letter from Holly from Slings x Showery x Fairly heavy  
stunt during night; quiet day x Wrote Holly x Reading "The  
Morals of Marcus Ordeyne" (Locke); very good x

8/7/1918 40 today! and nothing much to show for my years beyond a  
few gray hairs! I wonder what the next forty will be like? I  
suppose I can no longer lay claim to youth so must prepare  
myself to settle down into a disgruntled old bachelor x So  
long as I have plenty of books, cigarettes, & a dog for  
company, this state of existence will certainly have its  
attractions x So au revoir to the bright old days of youthful  
pleasures - & follies! Fine day; quiet x Ack, "buckshee" cigs  
from Mrs L. Le [Seurd] (Lautoka (sic), Fiji); Miss E. Corpe  
(Feilding); have Field (Lautoka) & Hemingway & Robertson  
x Sent 8/- to N. Z. W. C. Assn x

8/8/1918 Dull but fine x Heavy firing most of day direction Albert x  
Letter from Miss Morris x

8/9/1918 Letters at last thank heaven;! the first since July 11 x Four  
from Mother (May 19, June (undated), 4 - , & June  
(undated); x Kit, Pickles (2) , cousin Blanche, Aubrey (p.c.)  
Aunt Kate; Annie & Uncle Geo x Très bonne x Also  
notification from Base P. O. that a parcel posted at  
Wellington has been lost at sea owing to enemy actions x  
Damn! Wrote to Annie x Fine; not much artillery fire x



8/10/1918 Two parcels from Annie - birthday cake & bonson writing case, 2 tins milk 2 salmon tin fruit, slab chocolate, cigarettes, lots of toffee, cocoa, pencils, paper, ink, p. cards x Felt quite like I used to when I opened my birthday parcels in the long ago! Ever so many thanks Annie; you are très bonne x Paper from Aunt Amy x P.C. to Annie & note to Bank N. Z. re my money x Fine x Played 4th How, cricket x Got a licking x Quiet day x Read "The Four Feathers" (not bad) x Good news from Somme - 13,000 prisoners over 200 guns x

8/11/1918 A perfect day x Quite a Sabbath calm prevailed, as there was very little firing x Church parade morning; YMCA evening x Read "Mr Chicote M. P." (K. C. Thurston); good exciting story x Wrote Mother x Good news from Somme continues, over 17,000 prisoners x

8/12/1918 Very hot day x Bundle "Dominions" from Eff x Sent p.c's to all the family x Quiet x Read "Four White Feathers"

8/13/1918 Summer weather continues x Usual routine x Quiet x Wrote Cora Mac x Stunt still going strong down the Somme x Read "A Bachelor's Comedy" - too much twaddle x How things are done in this damn army; During this very trying weather, instead of allowing the men to go about in their shirt sleeves, we have to wear our tunics & bandoliers x In packing ammunition, where the men have to walk four or five miles, no allowance is made x These little pin pricks make us heartily sick of army methods x Too many duds & derelicts running the show x

8/14/1918 Still warm x Quiet x  $\frac{1}{2}$  holiday - 3rd place 2nd Brigade cricket - 2nd won 4 wkts x

8/15/1918 Warm Quiet day & about 8 this evening orders came to take ammunition to new positions forward x The Hun is returning x Long journey, not back until 2 am x Went thro' Gommecourt Wood (scene fierce fighting in 1916) & our new position is about to the right front if it x Wrote Pickles x

8/16/1918 Wrote Aunt Kate x Very warm x Good deal artillery fire in evening direction Albert x Very quiet on our sector x

8/17/1918 Fine x Letters from Annie & N.Z.W.C.A. (ack.); also paper Aunt Amy x Wrote Every indication of a "stunt" coming off within the next few days x

8/18/1918 Wrote Mother x Showery morning; church parade x The balloons on our sector moved forward this afternoon, & Fritz has been trying to reach them with his guns x We had orders to shift our guns forward this evening but order cancelled at last minute; in fact we had already commenced x Supposed to be a stunt tomorrow, we will be in reserve x

8/19/1918 Went up to the guns this morning x tonight the guns all went forward; but with the exception of one man per gun we are staying in old positions; but perhaps only for tonight x No one seems to know exactly the strength of things x There has been a mess up some- where, as our rations have gone to the new position; fortunately we had some "tucker" in hand, otherwise we would have no breakfast tomorrow x Heavy artillery fire direction Albert x Wrote Boy x Change in weather tonight x Read "Mr Opp" (Olive Egan Rice) YMCA buckshee grapes, oranges, chocs & cigs x

8/20/1918 There is to be "something doing" any time now x tanks were moving up all last night, and scores of guns are out in the open under camouflage x It is said that Foch & Haig were in this area yesterday x Little rain in night; today dull x Heavy firing direction Albert, lasted most of last night x Later; Going forward tonight to get everything in readiness for the "stunt" tomorrow x going to be a "real dinkum slather"

8/21/1918 (Near Gommecourt) [Puisieux 3 a.m. x Just finished; been at it all night x Everything now ready x Up again at 1/4 to 5 x Heavy mist about x full moon x 2pm; So far the day has gone well x Zero hour 4.55, & we continued firing until 7.45 x Heavy mist, until about noon, when sun came out very hot x Sky now alive with aeroplanes x Hundreds of prisoners going by; poor looking lot; some with bikes, etc x We have been waiting for orders: we may have to advance or stay in reserve x Very weary x We fired our stunt without Fritz touching us; evidently our infantry moved so quickly that his guns were captured x 8.30pm x Just waiting for limbers to come forward to move up the guns x We are advancing a few 1,000 yds x Another "all-night setting it will be x

8/22/1918 Near (Bucquoy) [Early forenoon Moved forward during night passed Oiseux (?) from rear of which our chaps advanced yesterday x Worked until about 4 this morning getting pit & ammunition fixed up, then went to sleep in shell hole x Since daylight Fritz has been heavily shelling us, & after two landed near edge of our shelter we cleared away to a flank x "Possy" a rotten one 2400 yds from Fritz's Front line; right in open & under close observation of his balloons Later: Just as we were about to open fire seven Hun aeroplanes, flying low, circled over our position, dropping bombs & firing machine guns x Later on more shelling x Very trying day so far (6.30 pm) x Minenwerfers & machine guns bullets flying round x

8/23/1918 Last evening about 8 Fritz counter attacked along whole front, & for about an hour we put up terrific barrage; enemy also very active x Had to wear gas masks x The Tommies retired about 1200 yds We are now within 1650 yds enemy front line x x x at 2.30 this morning another big stunt to retake territory & also a ridge x "Dinks" went over & gained objective x Very few casualties x An artillery officer N.Z. [ra] & his man captured 70 Huns x x x At 11 we again opened out along whole front for an hour x The day so far is going well x Noon: We are now ready to go forward, waiting for teams x Very warm; great day so far x 1.30 Party Hun prisoners passed; got souvenirs x One of them said "comprés" when I pointed to shoulder strap x Tired looking lot x The "Dink" N.C.O. in charge made Hun carry his fixed bayonet! At 6 pm the Centre X went forward x We are supposed to be in Baupame on Sunday x 3 Hun 4.2's captured here

8/24/1918 letter from Aunt Amy; p.c. Miss Morris x Centre X went forward last night & got in position & just starting on bivvies when orders came to be ready to move forward in an hour x Got away some time this morning to man position near Burquoy & were joined by remainder Battery xxx Supposed to come into action 4 am; but word came later that Fritz still retiring & that we are in Baupaume x Went to bunk at 5 am thoroughly tired out, throwing ourselves down on the roadside x Later word came thro' that Hun still retiring, & this morning soon after 9 we again went forward, and now (noon) we are in position ready for action before Baupaume

8/25/1918 Very cold during night x Hot day; misty x 6.30 am. Just finished barrage for the taking of Bapaume x Fine but misty first thing x A few shells came our way x Batch of Hun prisoners just passed along the railway line; poor looking specimens, mere boys some of them; carrying their own & our wounded x gam x Now waiting to move further forward x We have had so far two or 3 calls for artillery support x We move forward in the evening x One of our men was slightly wounded last night x While waiting for teams to come forward heavy thunderstorm torrential rain; no shelter, wet through x Moved off somewhere near 11 & reach[ed] new position Biefvillers, got gun into action, etc, & at 3.30 am Monday went to bed x At 9.30 had a bad 1/2 hrs shelling from Fritz x There are 3 Hun 5.9 [captured] guns [close] handy x In the dug out was found a map with all our gun positions round Foncquevillers marked out accurately x He even had marked that our two forward guns were "active" & the other four "silent" - absolutely correct! x Sent p.c's to Mother, Holly, Aunt Amy & Annie x Since Wed. we have advanced about 15000 yds x

8/26/1918 Slept again all standing last night, quiet tho x Bed at 3.30, & at 4.30 had to clear out owing to heavy shelling x S.O.E in morning; & then orders came to again move forward x Teams came up shortly afterwards & a fresh crew went with the guns, & myself & others stayed at horse lines x A cook was wounded during shelling; & on way up to guns today one another man was wounded x Since Tuesday night we have not had our clothes off, & on only one occasion did we get full nights rest, & then only until 4.30 x During evening we had orders to shift wagon lines; later countermanded x This afternoon our troops surrounded Bapaume, but so far have not entirely cleared it of the enemy x Another of our men wounded x this (sic) afternoon - 4 altogether so far x Paper from Aunt Amy x Fine, but dull x Another man wounded x



8/27/1918 Letters from Mother (June 17 - 24 -) Pickles, Koi, & Nell x Showery x This evening Fritz opened out on our wagon lines, & we had to make a hurried departure x Three men were wounded, & one horse killed & several wounded x Later in evening we shifted our lines about a mile to rear; raining most time x Fixed up a sheet over the wagons & made ourselves fairly comfy x Parcel from Annie (cake, salmon, sweets, raspberry & blk currant jam), très bonne x Advice Bank N.Z. re money from W.A.K. x While W.L. were being shelled some of our artillery turned round a couple of captured [O -] 5.9 & sent over a few of her own to Fritz x Had a shave & a wash!

8/28/1918 Showery; making bivvies, etc x Went up to guns with ammunition in evening, during which time our wagon lines were shelled; one donkey killed 3 wounded One man wounded x fair amount of shelling all round x During the last two days Fritz has greatly increased the intensity of his artillery showing he has got more guns back in position x ----- Hun shortage copper & brass at one of our dumps which has again passed into our hands, all the copper driving bands off the shells had been removed by Fritz; also all the brass stoppers from a huge pile of benzine tins x At another dump had removed all brass shellcases x (Our ammunition supply has been kept up wonderfully x

8/29/1918 Note to Mother & p.c. to Annie x This morning our Major (Fan) left for N.Z. x As a soldier every man has confidence in him, & three cheers were given; he came round & shook hands with each man x Soon after dinner orders came to pack up, & now (2.30) we are waiting within sight of the outskirts of Bapaume, which we have been told was evacuated by Fritz this morning x (correct) The whole army seems to be on the move; tanks, cavalry, guns, wagons, etc are passing us in constant stream x Later x Our teams had a hot time x It seemed sheer murder to send us forward in full sight of a balloon x Coming home the teams went at a headlong gallop, shells falling faster & faster about them x How only one man & 3 horses were wounded is a mystery - the whole lot would easily have been smashed up x Seems nothing but confusion in our battery this afternoon; orders being vague & ambiguous, & we were kept fooling about from one position to another x Eventually we were sent back to where we came from & had tea x We are to stand by for further orders x

8/30/1918 So far (evening) the quickest day 00 00 since the commt of the push x This morning at 5 there was a heavy stunt on our sector, the N. Zrs going over, & later news said they were fighting 2 villages beyond Bapaume, & we were fring at 6400 x We moved the W.L. in morning, but had gone only about 1/2 mile when we were ordered to return & await orders x "It is said" that we are waiting for the 42nd Division to come up on the right which they are expected to do later in day x 3 pkts cigs from dear old Pickles with instructions to "take one 3 times a day, or if necessary 3 times an hour" x At the rate I am smoking them I guess it will be 3 an hour x Right out of cigs, & hard to obtain; they come just at right moment o & a godsend x Good on you Pickles! P.C's to Aunt Amy, Sister Macmahon x Today trains were running along the main Albert - Arras & Bapaume (alongside our camp) lines x Good to see them going the right way x A yarn: "The Hun prisoners were coming over so thick today that a F.O.O., thinking a massive attack was taking place, put a barrage on them! x

8/31/1918 Quite a peaceful day for us; no shells, no ammunition carrying, etc x Had a bath, the first time for 12 days since I had had my clothes off x Got clean shirt, socks & towel x Parcel (cigs, cup, matchbox, tooth paste & hdkf from Ray; just out of paste, & cigs très bonne x Papers from Kit & Colonist summary N. Z.; also letter Annie & Holly x During the night our guns moved further forward, & are now to the left of Bapaume x /-----/ A captured whizz-bang near our R x x One of our officers asked some Maoris if they would like to work it x By gorry yes, we give Fritz plenty whizz-bang x So, after a little instruction the Pioneers were blazing with I--- I (smudged) They tied a long lanyard to the trigger, jumped into a shell-hole & pulled it x Thought it was a great joke x

9/1/1918 weather last days much colder x few showers x Quiet day at W.L. x Lieut. Priestly killed at guns x Wrote to Ray & Pickles x Going up to guns tonight with ammunition x 10.30 pm Just back; only a few shells well away; but quite a big shower of bombs x The 'planes were flying low, & seemed to be following our wagons, several dropping not far behind x We went at the gallop thro' Biefvillers, as it looked as if Fritz was making for the village x The incident however, is now only one of many which we laugh at - after it are over x Talking to Fritz prisoners x One told us he came from Silesia x Most of them seemed happy x As they re-commenced their walk to the cage after a spell on roadside, one said with broad grin "Finis la guerre!"

9/2/1918 Two "stunts" today; no report of result x This evening shifted W. L. to near Bapaume x Quiet day otherwise x Saw two or three batches of prisoners; poor looking lot majority x At Achiel (sic) - the Grand Gare is a heap of captured Hun war material - guns etc x The way some of the New Zealanders sometimes treat prisoners cause me indignation x I have on several occasions seen them go up to prisoners & without as much as "by your leave" tear open his haversack & take whatever pleases their fancy x Also also seen our men go thro' their pkts same way x Another time have seen them go among a batch of prisoners & take off their hats, altho' very hot day x I have myself taken off shoulder straps, but have always asked for them x "Souvenir" ? I said to one touching his shoulder strap, "Compris" he replied x To take advantage of prisoners & purloin what may be to them precious souvenirs seems to be too much like hitting a man when he is down x

9/3/1918 forenoon N.E. of Bapaume; another shift forward this morning; having just arrived here x Fritz has again retired towards the Hindenburg Line, & is said to have gone 1300 yds since yesterday x Yesterday our left flank (Tommies) did not come forward, & our guns helped them later on x In the centre we are well forward x Still fine open country, with practically no barbed wire x At distances of several hundred yards we come across Fritz ammunition where he has fired few rounds & then continued retreat x Heaps of his ammunition scattered everywhere x Our guns (L X C sect) now waiting to go forward (RX already gone) x Later (6) after a wait of several hours our guns went forward x The Hun apparently has stolen a march on us, as we appeared to have lost contact with him; not one of our guns has fired since early morning; & so far only one or two shells from Fritz have come over x Plenty of bombs during night x Heavy shower of rain while waiting to move off x

9/4/1918 Morning: Moved off again this morning at 5 o'clock; and are now awaiting orders to take guns in x So far we do not appear to have located Fritz x No breakfast up to present (8.30) x 9am x The YMCA have just "come to light" with biscuits & chocolates x 3.15 pm x Brought our guns into position after dinner and now, for the second time since coming here, we are sheltering in a trench from heavy gun fire x Our Battery is getting well sorted out, & bits are flying about everywhere x No bonne! 9 pm x at 6.30 we fired a stunt over Betancourt (sic) shortly before which big columns of smoke were going up in the direction & now the sky is lurid - Fritz burning his stores, etc, previous to evacuating x While shooting he put a good deal over, a few 100 yds on our right x Parcel cigs from Kit; very bonne x Very tired, just turning in; hope we have a quiet night x Two years today since we relieved a Tommy battery on the Somme x Saw a stranded Hun tank - very clumsy affair, but solid x This evening big lot of sneezing gas was put over by Fritz x



9/5/1918 Quiet day until evening x At 5.30 we commenced a stunt, & immediately Fritz opened out gave us a warm few minutes x The remainder of the stunt finished quietly for us; but afterwards Fritz shelled us at intervals x Then while sheltering in our shell hole a thunderstorm came on with very heavy rain, & soon our bivvy had several inches of water & slimy mud x Most of us with our blankets got wet x Fortunately we found a tunnel, in which we passed a fair night x Wrote Mother x Man (cook) wounded at W. L. ----- / -  
----- Several balloons (both ours & enemy are being burnt daily x

9/6/1918 Quiet day so far (6 pm) x Fine x We are awaiting orders to again move forward it being reported that Fritz is falling back x Wrote Kit, & ack book from NZWCA (enclosing 5 frs) x Paper from Aunt Amy x Parcel (pr socks 2 tins tobacco) from Miss E. Hair x Very many thanks; have only the socks I stand up in, & "bacca is most welcome x Ack. same x Evening; while waiting to move forward letters arrived; Mother (July 1 - 7) Kit; Pickles, Aunt Kate, Ray (2), Effie, Howie & Uncle Geo x Bonne! ----- / ----- Have come across dead horses from which this Huns have removed portions evidently to use as food x Huns use paper as substitutes for string, sandbags & towels; appear to be quite strong; but do not know how a towel would come out in the wash x

9/7/1918 After waiting about until midnight we moved forward about 2000 yds near village Ypres x Got to bunk at 1 am in a hut burnt by The British when in occupation previously x This morning woke up to find that the cook & the rations had been left behind x We could have done without the cook; but the rations! However we got breakfast about 10 x Our guns are in very open position in full view of Hun balloons x We are just standing by in readiness to again move forward x If we come into action here we will be blown out in about five mins x So far (11 am) a Fritz plane has made two attempts to down our balloons; not successful but the observers dropped "overboard" x 3 pm: so far the day has been a kind of holiday; awaiting orders to move up x Had a lovely swim in a near-by canal (said to be Nord) which runs underground considerable distance x Feel nice & clean x Moving forward after tea to behind village Metz x Not many shells falling in our vicinity x 10pm: Got to new position behind village Metz without mishap x Am now in good dug-out, & hope to get decent night's sleep x Good deal of "stuff" flying round x Fine day x Wrote Uncle Geo, pc to Annie, & note to Bank

9/8/1918 Afternoon: Quite a decent sleep last night x Weather changed this morning; & showers all afternoon x Now sheltering in bivvy x Few shells coming over x A Hun aeroplane came over our position while we were digging our gun pit soon after dinner, & apparently spotted us, for shells have been coming over since x Our ant-aircraft must have been asleep, for the Hun had a good look round, without opposition for some 10 mins, when they suddenly attacked & sent along a few shots x Remainder of day fairly quiet x

9/9/1918 Out at midnight until 1 am; then again at 3.30 to 5.30 am, during which we fired a stunt; then back to bed for a short while x During remainder of day we were firing at intervals x Had a shave & a wash x x x Rain evening x

9/10/1918 Rain all night & most of morning x Not much doing, so stayed between the blankets until dinner time, when the weather cleared & we fired a few rounds x Tin of milk from N.Z. Wrote Mother x xxx Buckshee cigs, biscuits & chocs. from YMCA x Had the easiest day for some time x ----- / ----- We have been very well fed since the "stunt" commenced x Had to be as we are always very hungry x

9/11/1918 Pleasant surprise - more N.Z. mail x One from Mother (July 14) Kit, Pickles, Eccus (at last), Huia Harrison, Cousin Betty, Sister MacMahon, Miss Young, Miss Burke x Rain most of morning; stopped in bed until 11.30 - nothing doing x up till now (6) had quite a lazy day x Hun still throwing a good deal of stuff around x Our artillery comparatively quiet until now, when we are getting busy x Very likely a "stunt" in the morning x Wrote Holly, Miss Morris & Reeve x Bully beef rissoles (?) for supper x ----- / ----- Frt When another batch of prisoners arrived at the cage (12th) those already there greeted them with waving hands & hdkfs & loud laughter x

9/12/1918 Showery throughout day x "Stunt" this morning from 5.30 to 7.30; thereafter firing at intervals x Our boys (Dinks) got to their objective taking in vicinity 200 prisoners; the right & left flanks are said to have been held up x Spent about an hour among the prisoners in the cage in Havrincourt Wood x Two or 3 cld speak English x One said "We [camp] in trenches last night; 5.30 this morning 'sizz, sizz, sizz - (making gesture of getting under cover). "and now we are prisoners" x said it with a laugh x been to [Jena r---tly]; most of prisoners from Italian front x Poor opinion of Italians & Austrians as fighters x Good many from Jaeger sect x All seemed willing to pull out their pkt books & let the diggers go thro them for souvenirs! The bread they were carrying black & heavy stuff x One of our chaps showed them a caricature of "Little Willie" (Crown Prince) & the English-speaking one showed it to his comrades & said "Little Willie" at which they all roared x Some of prisoners real hard doers x Many said they were hungry, so I obtained cheap popularity for time being by pinching tin of biscuits from YMCA & distributing them x Some of prisoners only 18, & said they had been in the

9/13/1918 Good deal of rain during night x Fine day x Artillery on both sides fairly active throughout the day increasing in intensity in evening x Wrote Nell & Daisy x Buckshee cigs & biscuits from YMCA; short of former x Large number of our 'planes busy during evening x One of our barrages today cut off 8 Fritz's from their line, & they immediately came helter-skelter to our line & gave themselves up x Letter from Holly x

9/14/1918 3 pm: Quiet day so far; only a few rounds fired x Before dinner "we" burnt a Fritz balloon & set another one adrift; one aeroplane brought down in flames by our archies & another by our 'planes x Dull windy day; our planes are active in large formations x Bombs fairly numerous in night x Last night two Hun bombing machines were brought down; one fell not so very far away; one of the occupants jumped out in a parachute & fell in his own lines; the other was captured x One of our men (Brittain) was killed this afternoon while taking some tea up to our O. Pip x He did not have to go, but thought the chaps might like a drink x Wrote Matia x Orders came through that we are to be relieved tomorrow x

9/15/1918 Before breakfast our airmen destroyed 3 Hun balloons; we lost one x Sunday 15 A memorable anniversary for the N.Z.F.A; when two years ago today we advanced through Delville Wood on the Somme x Fritz has just finished (1.30) strafing our position - no damage x All last night & until 6.30 this morning our guns (heavies also) were extremely active - on occasions the guns increased to drumfire x No sleep after 1 am until 7 o'clock x Real "summery" weather - the best day for some time x Has it's disadvantages however, as Fritz has several balloons looking down on us x Orders re being releaved (sic) cancelled so far as artillery concerned - concerns infantry only x Will be glad to get out if only for change of clothing, as we are all more or less lousy x 2.30 x, just had a few moments excitement; four 'planes suddenly swooped down on the balloons just behind us, destroying one x Such a clatter of machine-guns & archies; but Huns got away x A few seconds afterwards 10 of ours came on the scene! One Hun 'plane dropped some propaganda literature x 5.10 x Fritz has just got another of our balloons - making 3 each x 3rd portion 18.10.18 (not sent)

9/16/1918 Clear moonlight night last night; & throughout there was a constant dropping of "eggs" by Fritz around our vicinity x One of his 'planes , early in the evening, was caught in the rays of our search- lights, & was brought down in flames by one of our airmen x Today is very warm & hazy, with poor visibility; heard not much firing x Rumour current that Franco - American troops taken Metz (Alsace) with 48 as prisoners x During evening a few have e. & shrapnel burst over our heads while we were yarning outside our dug-out; so we retreated with what dignity we could, to our burrows x Letter from Annie x

9/17/1918 Wrote Mother x Short terrific thunderstorm during night which had effect of putting a stop to Fritz's bombers just when they were becoming a nuisance x Fine but windy x Quiet up till few mins. ago, when shells began to come over our postn; nothing so far very close, but we have to keep "down & under" Before dusk I saw one of our 'planes forced to land by Fritz: the enemy clung to his quarry & made no mistake; don't know how the occupants fared x More bombing at night x Just as I was going off shift at 10.30 there was a rattle of machine - gun fire over Havrincourt Wood (near by) a cheer from some of the chaps; a glow in the sky' then a big burst of flame; coloured lights (Fritz's signals) glowed, the outline of the machine was seen a great blaze of sparks & bits of falling wreckage, the thuds of the dropping bombs; and another Gotha will trouble us no more o' nights!



9/18/1918 Rain during night & early morning x Stunt at 8.30, putting up smoke barrage for the K.O.S.B, who went over; but are said - to have obtained their objectives x During afternoon we were subjected to nearly 3 hours hard strafing by Fritz, with lot of gas x It was a case of keeping under; some very close x Most trying ordeal x A horse which we had up here was killed x One of our boys (Slack) was killed at hdqtrs in Havrincourt Wood this morning x We had an "SOS", & gave Fritz a few rounds rapid x Things now (8.30) nice & quiet x Plays the devil with a chaps nerves nowadays - one can never get use (*sic*) to this intense shell fire x

9/19/1918 Letter razor & cigs from Aunt Amy x Little firing during day; but generally quiet x Wrote Harry Finney x

9/20/1918 Letter from Holly x Our battery relieved & we went to the Wagon Lines, having been just a month on the move, during which we have been under more or less shell fire daily, with bombs at night x Fine x

9/21/1918 Parcel from Annie - (cakes sweets, sardines, rasp. jam, chutney); had good "tuck-in" for supper x Wrote Aunt Amy & p.c. to Annie x Showery x Easy day x

9/22/1918 Paper Aunt Amy x Showery x In bed all day - bit "off colour" x

9/23/1918 Showery x Wrote Annie x In bed all day x

9/24/1918 Wrote Mother, detailing my diary up to including Aug 26 x  
Letter Miss Morris x Two of our balloons were attacked by two  
Fritz aeroplanes this afternoon & destroyed x Showery x  
Guess going into action tomorrow x Wrote Holly x

9/25/1918 Showery morning x Guns went into action this evening in  
front of Metz x Supposed to be a "stunt" in a day or two x  
Good news from Palestine, and Salonika front (sic) x On  
duty again x

9/26/1918 Showery; fine evening x Several of our balloons burnt x  
"Stunt" tomorrow morning x Early this morning Fritz  
heavies strafed our line, no doubt o having in his mind to get  
in first & stop an expected attack x ----- Bunch of  
prisoners passing along; one of them splendid stamp of man,  
about 6 ft 6 in x Very fierce looking, & moustache curled like  
Hindenburg x Passed some Tommies x Says one of them,  
looking at big Hun "Gor blimie me chum; blest if they 'arn't  
gone & captured old Hindenburg!" Prisoner remained  
scowling fiercely; don't know whether he understood x

9/27/1918 Fairly big "stunt" this morning; objective said to have been  
gained x Heavy rain just before start; fine remainder day x  
Letter for N.Z.W.C.A ack. S. 5 fcs x Wrote Sister Macmahon  
x

9/28/1918 Letter from Annie; paper Aunt Amy x Showery x As result of stunt yesterday Bourlon Wood has fallen; also reported Cambria (sic) [Con---] good news Palestine & Macedonia; Bulgaria asking for peace x Guns went forward; also wagon lines to Neuville Moved off at dusk after waiting all day x Road full of traffic; passed prisoners x

9/29/1918 White frost this morning x Guns went forward again as result of stunt this morning; wagon lines shifted up to former gun position well beyond Metz; but returned again to same lines x Gun position came in for some shelling x A cape cart with two donkeys attached got away & came crashing into our g. s. wagon x One of the "donk's" legs got into wheel & animal had to be shot & leg sawn off to get free x

9/30/1918 Wintery weather x Hun has retired once more, & we moved our guns forward 2 or 3 miles; also W.L. beyond Metz x The whole army was on the move, roads being choked with traffic x Saw sign in village "to Canberra", so we are not far away x On way up with ammunition today saw burial party at work Digging one of our boys x On way back a fresh mound of earth; a little wooden cross at head; & bayonet & rifle placed on mound x

10/1/1918 Sent p.c's to Mother & Annie x Many happy returns dear Mother x Heavy rain during night x Fine day, but cold x Good news continues from all fronts x Bulgaria has surrendered, & Turkey said to be after [Arras] x Two of our balloons burnt x Rumour: Ostend fallen with 40.000 prisoners to British & Americans // ----- / ----- Heavy stunt all along line this morning x

10/2/1918 Shifted wagon lines to Ribecourt; guns also moved forward x In the distance the spires & chimney stacks of Cambria (sic) were easily discernable; Columns of smoke were rising from the town x Fine day, but dull & cold x

10/3/1918 Last night set out with 12 wagons with ammunition for guns x New track over rough country x Lost way once or twice; a wagon fell into a shell hole & later thro' a bridge x Pitch dark night x Our battery seems all upside down x Other batteries in brigade had either come back or were returning before we got a start, after waiting all day x Something wrong somewhere x Chaps don't mind working all night if necessary, but hate being fooled about x Got back at 1.30 this morning x Fine day, & an easy one for us x Our aeroplanes very active in large formations morning & evening x The village of Ribecourt, built of limestone, now in ruins, reminds me somewhat of an Egyptian village, with lots tumbled down walls & neglected state x Letters & photo from Miss Reeve & Uncle Geo x Wrote Mother detailing my diary up to & including Sept. 5 x Wrote to Aunt Amy x

10/4/1918 Good news from all fronts continues x Officially reported that Turkey has asked for peace x If so, the general position will be intensely interesting & no-one can say what will happen x Perhaps Austria will then "cave in" & Germany deserted by all her allies, will satisfy her people that they (the heads) have done their best to win but that, left alone she can fairly claim an honourable peace x A quiet day for us x Wrote to Miss Thornton x Should not be surprised if the German "heads" have not engineered Bulgaria & Turkey to make peace, & then Austria, in order to save their own bacon when she herself must come to terms x

10/5/1918 Fine, but wintery x In evening our guns went forward, myself going with them, & we are now somewhere about N E. SE of Cambria (sic) x Plenty of captured guns hereabouts, many of which were turned on Fritz by the infantry x This morning, during course of  $\frac{1}{2}$  hrs ride we came across more abandoned Hun ammunition than I have seen anywhere else x Got guns into action about 8.15; bed midnight x The guns were captured by the 1st Auckland, & included some naval ones x The enemy might have been surprised, because none had been put out of action x Our position is near village Moniares(?) x Cambria is still burning x

10/6/1918 Fine, but windy & cloudy x We were fooled about a good deal by our officers, who after giving us our line, moved our gun back about 20 yds, just as we had finished moving 500 rounds amtn x Had to set to & move all amtn again x Our guns were [busy] all day, & Fritz must have had a pretty lively time x They did not send much over in our direction; just after breakfast a few came near our bivvies, one hitting one & wounding him pretty badly in abdomen x ----- / -----  
- Near Versailles we came across a German cemetery; very well kept; paths etc x At another place was a big concrete tomb, with surrounded by low wall of stones, surrounded with a chain railing x Big iron cross cut out on tomb which contained the names of great number theirs x Fritz evidently thought he was going to permanently occupy this part of the country x

10/7/1918 Moved forward this morning, crossing the Canal at Vaucelles  
x The bridge over canal has been destroyed by the retreating  
enemy, but two of our own are now alongside it - one with the  
notice "to carry tanks" x Very pretty approach to village -  
green field flanked with line of willows running thro' it, &  
canal running at side x Reminded me of a little bit of NZ  
with field & willows x Passed many more captured guns x  
Great artillery activity - especially on part of British - all  
day x We are now further E of Cambria, the spires of which  
can just be seen - still burning tonight x "Stunt" tomorrow x  
13.10 L 20 E 3925 Sweep 30' LS.O.S.



10/8/1918 Not much rest last night; too many shells going & coming x  
"Stunt" from 4.30 to 7.30 & 9.30 20.30 today x Rather  
warm time for some of us: Two men killed & four wounded x  
Infantry made good advance & we went forward during  
afternoon & now 8.30 just turning in x Passed along very  
pretty low-lying valley, with canal running thro x It was  
strange to see villages in the war area so free from ruin: The  
Steeple were intact on the churches, & no gaping holes could  
be seen; tho' on closer observation many of the roofs (sic) had  
been shattered x Just shows how we have spared the French  
towns x Huns were heavily shelling certain parts of the line;  
he seems to have plenty of guns x During our stunt this  
morning two aeroplanes came over our guns & machine-  
bulleted us - got some Tommies on our left & 12th Battery on  
right x Another stunt in the morning x Had a shave! xx We  
came into action within 800 yards of our front line, just near  
the Cambria - St Quentin (sic) railway, which was being  
heavily shelled by Fritz

10/9/1918 Good night x Up at 4.30; stunt 5.30 - 7.30 x When half way thro our section (centre) were ordered forward x We are told by the infantry that Fritz has stolen another march on us as they did not come in touch with him during their advances; reaching final objectives without seeing enemy x Not a shell fell from him while we were firing & the infantry had an uninterrupted advance x We are now just to the west of Ligny, which we took this morning x On our way up saw lots of dead Germans on a [flat between] railways x Passed a huge ammunition dump, well smashed up x Went thro villages of Lesdain (?) Crevecoeur (?) x Seranvillers x Houses showed signs of hasty removal - fermented food, etc, all higgledy piggledy - perhaps made so by our chaps looking for souvenirs x At Seranvillers one of our infantry, was sitting on the corner dressed in a [---- ----] clothing; thought he was a Froggie at first, & said to him "halloo messieur" Two others dressed in women's clothing & hats like umbrellas parading streets; others with new straw hats on x Went into several houses - only got a collar stud as souvenir x The country here is fine looking; lot under cultivation; also

10/10/1918 Crossing Cambria (sic) - St Quentin railway line; badly damaged x Moved forward early in morning; no breakfast, no rations having arrived x Cold & windy x Passed thro town of Beauvais, Fontaine, Caudry, (outskirts) in which were occupied by Huns to yesterday x The church we tried to dislodge [n---] gunners was only slightly damaged in roof; organ intact; very pretty one x At Beauvais (?) Fontaine another chap & myself found some French civilians, who had not cleared out, but had been under German rule for four years x Altho we were not the first soldiers they had seen, they were very excited & [---] us with this if viva la Anglataire, "viva la France" we replied, which they repeated x We were pressed into the house & made to drink coffee x Three very old people, a made-up woman & a younger one x Shook hands [en-----ly] They told us that the civilians were sent away on Oct 1 (the girl got an almanack (sic) & pointed out the date to me "allemande partee toot-sweet? "oui oui" they said x Outwardly the buildings are damaged but slightly by

10/11/1918 Rain all day x Our section moved back to wagon lines during morning x A factory in vicinity has been used by Huns for horse meat - lots of horses still hanging in different states dissection; also some dead ones not yet cut up x Some being salted down; great heaps of bones & hoofs - Huns waste nothing x Just as we had made a bivvy orders came that we have to move back again x This sort of thing makes a man full-up of this life; the heads apparently do not know their own minds two minutes in succession x Near some of the heads could not run a fowl-yard, yet let alone a war x Got to position about 7.30 & "parked" up in a dirty loft x Tonight I saw a & church the British using church towers for signalling - the first instance I have personally known x In this case the Hun would be quite justified in shelling them x We are out for a spell - how long I don't know x

10/12/1918 Showery x This afternoon I walked thro' Beauvais, Fontaine - a town about size of Nelson x Our barrage did not harm it x The roads had in places been mined by Fritz; in front of the Church a mine has exploded & blown the doors away & damaged the brickwork x Beautiful little church; many of the stained glass windows broken x When I was in the church an organist was playing the organ x The "Marseilles" struck up; its glorious triumphant notes filling the edifice with inspiring music - it was perhaps the first time since Hun occupation that the French National Anthem has been heard in the church x "Nearer My God to Thee" also played x The music filled me with vivid memories of home x Throughout the village numerous tri-colours were flying from the houses

10/13/1918 Lovely bundle (13) of NZ. letters after tea tonight; had a great time reading them all x Three from Mother (x July 23 - 30, Aug 5 - 13) Kit, Koi, Pickles (2) Eff, Ray (2) Wop (p.c.) Marion Thornton, Blanche x Wrote Mother (posted before arrival letters) x This morning 3rd Brigade held church parade in big bldg in Beauvais x Gnr Johnstone present x Good sermon & fine singing x Dull day x Lesson from closing chapter of Isaiah (?) ; sermon from vows of Moses "Remember all the way over which the Lord thy God," etc x Very appro. words for the occasion x Dull but fine day x News continues good x Germany has asked for an armistice & is willing to evacuate occupied territory x Peace seems in sight x

10/14/1918 This morning had a bath – the first for many weeks; also first clean shirt for about a month x At Bouvais (sic) I went over what remains of a large textile factory; counted over 1000 looms; majority have been dismantled by enemy & parts scattered all over floor x Great part of bldg has been burned x Afternoon (1/2 holiday) went to Caudry – quite a large manufacturing town x Place practically undamaged x Good many civilians – mostly old men & women & children x All were well dressed, especially the m'nsles, good boots & clothing x Many of them were removing their belongings x Seemed very glad to see us & when we spoke they either lifted hats or saluted us x Band playing in sq. in front Hotel de ville x Street mined in places x Beautiful church; only windows broken x Wrote Miss Morris x ----- // -----  
Notes in town: Do not enter; believed to be mined" x "This place dangerous"! etc x

10/15/1918 Drizzling rain morning x Met Holly x Was at the village when he called at our billet; & when coming home nearly passed him without recognizing him x He has got very thin x Had great pow wow x Great treat to see "one of my own" after three years x Letter from Annie x Wrote Miss Reeve x Sent a joint p.c. to Mother & Howie x Germany asking for armistice x

10/16/1918 Drizzling rain x Going into town this morning I ran into Holly x Spent most of afternoon & all evening with him x Have orders to go into action tomorrow, to relieve a Tommy Battery x Going thro Bouvaís today great contrast to first time: then houses deserted, streets [-----] with broken telephone wires, odd bits of furniture, very little traffic x Today: streets crowded with "diggers", motors; lorries, horses; pianos playing; typewriters clicking, bands playing, canteens doing roaring business, baths fired up, mined roads repaired; smoke from chimneys bustle everywhere x Douia (sic) , Laon, La Fere, & [Nist] captured x

10/17/1918 Drizzling rain x Lot of sickness in our Battery; 20 men to hospital in 2 days x Afternoon went up to new position with ammunition: thro Bethencourt x Visley (sic) x Evening spent with Holly x Parcel from Annie - cake, sweets, jam, milk chutney x Took some tea & sugar Mother sent, & with Holly & a few cobbles had a slap-up supper x Sent joint p.c. to Annie

10/18/1918 Wrote Mother detailing diary up to § including Sept 15 x At 6 this morning guided up ammunition wagon to new gun position, just the other side Viesley (sic) x During night postn was severely strafed x Spent afternoon § evening with Holly x Enemy shelling Caudry § other towns in back areas x Three guns went into action tonight; remainder Battery tomorrow start lo Sunday x

10/19/1918 Foggy x Rest of guns went into action x Start now tomorrow x Spent afternoon § evening (concert 42nd División) with Holly x Sickness still prevailing among Battery, men being sent to Hsptl daily x Fritz doing a little long-range shooting x

10/20/1918 Wet foggy day x Shifted W. L. to other side Bethencourt x Saw Holly (who is also going forward today) for a few mins. before moving off x Rotten trek x Managed to find dry billets in the village x Quite pleasant evening in Sgts mess with gramophone § songs x Big stunt this morning by 42nd División, who are said to have gained their objectives x

10/21/1918 Trafalgar Day! Guns moved forward thro Solesmes, over canal; teams had very hot time, one man wounded x Papers from Kit (W. Press § Dom's) Ray § Mother; cigs § tooth paste from Ray; have been unable to buy tooth paste for over a week; cigs very bon! Wet § muddy day x



10/22/1918 Last night a shell fell in our horse lines, killing 12 & wounding about 18 x Worst hit we have had with our horses x Wet day x Holl's coy went passed our W. L. today & was told he is attached to G.H.Q. - good luck to him x Still very short of men owing to sickness x said to be big stunt tomorrow; road choked with traffic today; N.Z. troop went up x Note & clippings from Putty x Wrote Holl x Parcel clothing (gloves, bon scarf) undervest & pants) from Aunty per Mother; also tin bonsoi cigs & sweets from Aunty x Ack parcel from Aunty x

10/23/1918 Jolly hard day x Big stunt this morning x Shifted W. L. to gun position Briastre; then took up guns & ammunition to new position at Beugran [ventergul] from which enemy was driven this evening x Had pleasant surprise passing thro' Briastre, seeing Holly on corner - he is o/c prisoners! had a pooooooooo (crossed out - words indecipherable) few mins' yarn with each other - then off! Roads choked with traffic, & plenty of mud, making going heavy for teams x Gave Holl some of Ray's cigs x Foggy morning, but cleared up later in day x Farm country; lot under cultivation x

10/24/1918 Went back to Bethencourt to get my swag, which was left behind yesterday x Shifted W.L. to Beauvois; guns did not go forward x Big stunt this morning; enemy said to have further retired x Last evening two shells killed 30 horses of 1st Battery, a 100 yds from where we now are x Fine day x The villages we have passed through during last few days have been considerably knocked about x So far as I can see, judging by the cultivated fields, that life must have gone on much in the same way as formerly with the peasants x We are taking advantage of the vegetables & living well - all the cooks have to do is to go to the first field & collect what he needs for the stew x A big barn we found today full of unthreshed wheat & barley, on which we are sleeping in a trench tonight x `

10/25/1918 Letter paper from Annie x Moved guns forward; Fritz said to be on the run again x We have not fired since yesterday morning x Dull day; rain evening x Wrote Annie x Sharp 'stunt' on our right x Rumours about being relieved by Yanks on 29th /-/ just about time the Division had a spell x

10/26/1918 Moved guns & W.L. forward this morning x Went thro several villages including Romeries x Our W.L. guns are at Beaudignies & the guns W. L. at X P. P x Foggy morning but brighter later on x There are several clumps of woods about here .aglow (sic) with autumnal tints - a picture scene to delight the eye of a painter - russet brown golden leafed-poplars, & other trees of varying and delightful hues x Recalls when we were trekking from the Somme in "16 (Oct) x took advantage of a quiet afternoon to have a shave & a general clean up x This morning a horse bumped me in the mouth, breaking off a tooth from my upper plate, loosening a crown, & smashing a piece off a good one x Felt like shooting the animal! Few shells flying round, but so far at safe distance x Letter Daisy x During night Fritz sent along a good deal of stuff, & at one time it looked as if we would have to turn out & shift the horses x The bridge (Pont-à-Pierres) had been blown up by Fris, & many pioneers were at work rebuilding & putting up pontoon bridges )

10/27/1918 9 a.m. : Beautiful calm, mild sunny morning x Am seated in an orchard surrounded with poplars, the leaves of which are shining gold x There is an old whitewashed brick cottage at one end, occupied by some Tommy officers who are now seated around a table in the open having breakfast x Aeroplanes droning overhead; sounds of chopping & hammering in the wood just below, through which runs a canal x Only occasionally hear sound of guns x Very peaceful x There is a "Sunday" feeling in the air x Evening; since the foregoing lines were written we have had a bad time & several casualties both to men & horses x Gnr Johnston considered our W. L. were too close up (we were in front of

- 10/28/1918 Fine day; quiet, except for few shells x Moved our guns (only 4 in action) to the rear x Our O.C. evidently did not have enough foresight to pick positions beforehand, & the teams were kept fooling about from one place to another, & when guns were at length unlimbered they were not sure if they were even in the right place; may have to be moved tomorrow x Went to Romeries & had a bath x Wrote Mother; letter from Annie x Balloon (ours) burnt)
- 10/29/1918 Fine x Moved our guns to another position this morning x We are in reserve, & are likely to be settled here for about a week x Fritz aeroplanes active over our lines - about 14 - most I have seen for some time x ----- Several of our men which have gone to hospital with flu have since died x
- 10/30/1918 Fine x During Hun strafing of a balloon near our lines two of our men were wounded by shrapnel x Things were lively for a min or two x "Rumour" that Austria is "napoo" x
- 10/31/1918 Battery came out of action today for a few days spell & [reorganizing] for a "stunt" that is coming off x Gnr Johnstone round lines today x Went up with team & pulled out guns; raining part of trip x

11/1/1918 Fine mild sunny day x Went to dentists at Solesmes & had one extracted & have to go back in fortnight for new plate x Gums feeling bit sore tonight x Letters from Mother (Aug 19-25) Aunt Kate, Koi, Pickles, cousin Blanche, & Aunt Amy x Solesmes not much knocked about; with exception of church x Big stunt this morning on our left x ----- Lately I have noticed French civilians returning to which remains of their homes - their belongings in barrows & hand trucks, pushed by old men & women & youngsters x

11/2/1918 Wet cold day x Nursing my jaw! Centre X went into action; remainder of guns going in later x Wrote to Mother, Cousin Blanche, Aunt Amy & p.c. to Annie x A year today since we were relieved at Passchendale /-/ that slough of Despond!

11/3/1918 Cold day; wet night x Remainder of guns went into action today; big stunt in morning x Our W.L. are shifting forward early x Turkey is out of the war; Austria - Hungry most probably x Still nursing my jaw x Reading "The Luck of the Vials" (E F Benson) x Two prs socks & "chronicle" from Annie x ----- While going thro' relieved villages on 5th civilians showed hatred of Germans x One old man shook his stick fiercely at some prisoners as they went by x At church at [Cingnes] (near Carnoy) we noticed a crowd of civilians having argument with the verger x They [---] & brought off a coffin containing the body of a Hun officer, whose comrades had no time to bury him x The coffin was deposited in the ditch & the wreaths at followed x They refused to allow Bosche to remain in their church ----- /----- One of our shells (one of very few) hit a house; We said to the old woman "pointing to damage, "No bonne!" yet again She did not mind in the least & said "Bonne, bonne: deliverance, deliverance" signifying the damage was nothing compared to being released x -

11/4/1918 Long & tiring day x Big stunt this morning; shifted W.L. early & took them to gun position, guns being taken well forward x Just as we had prepared to make ourselves comfortable for night orders came to shift W.L. further up; took us four hours, over heavy roads & cross country; full of traffic & numerous long stoppages x got to bed about 10.30 x Our chaps took Quesnoy, with several hundred prisoners x Also (the 2nd Wellington) A gun & teams & gun crew x The captors mounted the N.C.O.'s hack & brought the team, guns & men back in triumph x Last night very wet but day turned out fine x Saw aeroplane come down in flames x

11/5/1918 Another early move x going as far as le Carnoy & getting there about noon, & having a descent billet x Steady rain all the way, & roads heavy x Stunt early morning, & it is said the N.Z.ers today & yesterday had best day ever had x Passed thro' several freed villages full of civilians, who gave us great reception; Huns only driven out few hrs previously x Enemy seems to have suffered severely judging from what we saw x Passed along Forest of Mormal, which despite weather, was a mass of autumnal tints x Enemy has cut down good deal, using English prisoners & also male & female civilians x The latter told us that for giving our men food, they were threatened with imprisonment x Also that for 2 yrs (at le Carnoy) the Huns have commandeered all potatoes x At le Carnoy we were given as much coffee as we

11/6/1918 Wet miserable day x Standing by all the time awaiting orders to go forward x most of the bridges & roads have been blown up, & the side roads & tracks are about impassable owing to the weather x Very likely (7 pm) we will stop here all night x Someone pinched the issue of rum; if the criminal or criminals were caught tho, the boys wld have lynched them! We are about 5 kilos (sic) from Belgian border x

11/7/1918 Foggy damp day, with threatening rain x After being ready to move off all day we moved away at 3 pm, on what proved to be a wild goose chase x After darkness our O.R. lost his way at head of column & would have led us into No Man's Land if an infantry officer had not told him where we were x After long delay, we eventually left guns in a paddock, with [---] supply ammunition; then further on we left wagons in another paddock  $\frac{1}{4}$  mile away; & put up horse lines in Mormal forest about mile further back x We ended up the trek with guns in one position (with two men standing by); wagons somewhere else; some gunners in the village; our horse lines elsewhere; & the ration cart (with next days provisions & the rum in a ditch miles away! Slept in open in the forest, with damp leaves for bed; thank heaven the rain left off did not fall & mess up all round x We were able to get some hot stew late at night x



11/8/1918 Rain most of day x Moved forward again at 3 x In meantime we had made big fires & dried our clothes x Whole Battery moved & we got to W.L. just at dusk, steady rain falling x Here we found our officers had made no provision for billeting us, no doubt trusting to luck & Providence to provide for us x Under our late O.C. a guide always went ahead & looked out for billets; but apparently our O.C. is lacking in common sense x Naturally we were very annoyed; but in the end, owing to the good fortune a billet reserved for another Battery was not wanted at the last minute, all the men were put under cover x Camping in the rain would have been the alternative x Guns going into action later tonight x We are now some distance from Belgian border, as we are running travelling parallel with it x Went thro' village Haugines (sic) x Lots of mud now about, & conditions generally unpleasant x Two guns went into action, but before they were ready to fire orders came to cease, as the enemy was out of range x He is still going; & sending over very few shells x

11/9/1918 Bright sunny day - just glimpse of sun for several days x Centre X went forward; but were turned back x W.L. went forward  $\frac{1}{2}$  mile to village of [Busseines] where we are now in billets & the Battery has been relieved - for a week it is said x Peace rumours busy - said the Hun reps, have been to Versailles, & that they have 72 hrs to accept our terms x Also said the Yanks & French have passed thro Metz & are at Sedan - where the French capitulated in 1872 x Fritz cleared out of here yesterday - good many civilians here x Nice looking country x Letters from Annie & Sister Norris; sent p.c. to Annie x Many happy returns Aubrey

11/10/1918 Frosty morning; sunny day x In afternoon walked to Hautmont, 3 K. on, Maubeuge being 5 K from latter place x At former place bridges destroyed, but now being replaced x Town quite a big place, & only very few houses damaged x Flags flying everywhere x Plenty of civilians x Have heard many gruesome stories of Hun's treatment of women x Two prisoners came thro Hautmont this afternoon & civilians gave them a bit of a hot time x Supposed to be moving back the Fontaine tomorrow for a rest x Rumoured that Kaiser abdicated x Wrote Mother x

11/11/1918 Has Peace really arrived x Rumours all day that hostilities have ceased x The last few days there has been very little artillery fire x Other rumours: Revolution in Germany; Berlin has been bombed; Crown Prince is marching on Berlin with 10,000 men! This morning we moved out, & from all a/c's we are out either for good or for a good long spell x Eight hours on road, cold dull day x Going on again tomorrow x If hostilities have really ceased, we will not be able to realize it for some days x In view of vagueness of news no enthusiasm shown, but I think most of us are hoping that such is really so x We camped at Villereau for night x Tea butter tin milk from Mother x During trek came across 1914 trenches & shell-holes, now overgrown with grain & weeds x

11/12/1918 On trek again at 7 am, reaching Quivry (sic) at 2 x Frosty morning, sunny day x Passed thro villages of Ghissignies, Salesches, Neuville, etc x Good billets x Ours is a house, with a nice stone & [su--] bed x Sat round fire at night, & had sing song x Seems to be correct that the armistice has been signed x It is [fine] to be well out of the firing line & able to sleep without gas helmets handy & bombs from Fritz x

11/13/1918 2pm: am seated alongside a fire in Beauvois where I came this morning to see dentist x Just had dinner with Holls & he is seated beside me reading O. D. [Tone] x Armistice has been signed, so the war is just about over, bar the cheering x All sorts of rumours as to what we are going to do x Glorious day x Three years since I left Wellington x Have read that the armistice has been signed x Will soon be out of a job! It is said that the N.Z.ers are going to the Rhine to garrison duty x Received with mixed feelings x At Beauvais the Diggers held mass [mtg], more or less of a good natured order, & decided that they would not go x

11/14/1918 Another glorious day; reminiscent of typical Nelson winter weather x Went into Beauvois, & after seeing dentist spent rest of day with Holl x Today the whole Division held a church parade as a thanksgiving for the war Three years since I sailed from N.N. (Christchurch) x Little Willie has been assassinated & Pa has cleared out to Holland x

11/15/1918 In bed all day; not too good last day or two x Another beautiful day x Parcel from Kit also Dominion; summary from Harry Finney, & tin cocoa & milk from Mother x

11/16/1918 weather ditto x In bed x We have been told that we will be going to the Rhine between 2nd & 24 Dec, by train x Will remain there for a week or two, then come back, hand over our horses etc, & then go to camps in England, returning to N.Z. according to our reinforcement x The first lot to return should include up to 8th or 9th x Educational scheme to be instituted as soon as possible x

11/17/1918 Cold raw day x Still in bed but feeling better x

11/18/1918 Early morning fine, but slight fall of snow (the first this winter) about 10 o'clock) x Walked into Beauvois to dentist; also saw Holl & spent most of day together x Wrote Mother

11/19/1918 Raw foggy day x Wrote Kit & note to N.Z.W. Assn x

11/20/1918 Went to dentist at Beauvois, & spent most of day with Holls x Raw & foggy x

11/21/1918 Hard frost: sunny day x Reading Literary Lapses (Leacock) x Football 13th beat 11th (1st team) 23 - 6 x

11/22/1918 Still fine, but very little strength in sun x Went to pictures followed by lecture by Belgian soldier; very interesting x Letter Aunt Amy x Football 13th beat 4th (6 - 0) gunner teams x

- 11/23/1918 Sunny day x Parcel from Annie (cakes, sweets, sardines) x Letter Aunt Amy x Wrote Annie x Football 13th beat 12th [ser—] 3 - 0; very exciting match x 12th were giving points (6 - 12) in before match, so we rather surprised them x
- 11/24/1918 Cold day x Church parade morning; afternoon with Holl x Letter Miss Reeve x
- 11/25/1918 Raw day x Papers from Ray tin cocoa milk Mother x Wrote Mother & Koi x The old people who have come back to their house are very kind to us; plenty of backshee coffee, also "chips" x
- 11/26/1918 Raw day x The people in that house are very good to us x Tonight they made us plenty of potato chips & coffee, & would not hear of accepting any payment x Supposed to be moving off to Germany within the next few days x
- 11/27/1918 Starting for the Rhine tomorrow x Raw day x
- 11/28/1918 Moved off at 7 am, on first stage to Rhine x Pulled up at Escarmain (about 12 K) at 11 x Likely to be here for a day or two x Camped in a barn x Steady rain all day x Sat round a fire at night & had several arguments x
- 11/29/1918 Showery x Moving off tomorrow x More arguments round the fire at night x

11/30/1918 Moved off 8.30; trekked until about 3.30 x Frosty morning; raw foggy day x Passed thro Bavay, billeting about 3 kilos beyond, & now being about same distance from Belgium border x Passed hundreds of returning refugees x We are on the road to Mons, signposts bearing the name recalling vivid recollections of the "old contemptibles" x We are in billets some 3 Kilos from the old historic battleground of Malplaquet, where the French & British fought in 1709 x

12/1/1918 Fine, but very cold x This afternoon while out for a stroll met Bishop Sadlier had a yarn with him x Jolly pleased to meet him x The King & Prince Albert inspected our infantry at Bavay (3 Kilos) this morning x We are said to be moving off on Thursday Tuesday to Mauberge, & thence to Cologne x

12/2/1918 Fine, but cold x Moving out tomorrow x Letter from Amy, Annie

12/3/1918 Long trek, pulling up at Ferrière la Grande x Went within few Kilos. Mauberge, which city we skirted x Cold, & at times driving rain x Off again tomorrow making Charleroi (sic) about Friday x Witnessed funeral of child just before moving out x First two little Kiddies carrying cross; then several more girls with muslin robes, bearing a banner x Then the coffin, borne by women dressed same; then more girls dressed same carrying wreaths x Padre followed, & then mourners x at Jeumont 100's of railway trucks & carriages had been left on the line by enemy x In some cases several had been destroyed perhaps by our bombs x Process sugar refined; beetroot taken along water chute (sic) to base of factory, where it is picked up by a chain windlass buckets & conveyed to top of bldg; where it is shot into vat; & going thro various processes emerges in thick liquid on ground floor, where it flows into vats, which when full are return revolve at tremendous rate, & in few mins the brown sugar appears x

12/4/1918 Long trek today, leaving at 9 & pulling up at Fontainevalmont about 3.30 x Very thickly populated country, & we passed thro some very fine towns x Some of the villages had been good deal destroyed in 1914 x At Jeumont (a large mnftng city) the railway station is a wreck & many fine houses have been burnt out x Passing along met Holly, & just had time to drink the glass of stout he was holding before we were off x Crossed Belgian frontier few Kilos further on; & in the town of Serle-sur-Sambre (sic) the decorations were still to be seen in honour of the relieving army x  
N 7 R R killed here. also saw some Aircies after lunch



12/5/1918 Short enjoyable trek today to Lobbes thro some very rich agric. country x So far as outward appearances go the people have been living well x Soon after crossing into Belgium we came across cows, sheep & horses, poultry & on enquiring we found that 1 reason for this was, that the Hun had levied a big sum on the inhabitants to allow them to keep their stock x Another reason was that the armistice had been signed when they returned x We were told that the Hun pd big prices in his own paper money for produce, as an instance: 25 cent. for butter before war; afterwards 1,000 x I don't suppose the Hun ever had any idea he would have to pay in coin for his paper money; but this is so as the French Govt. are giving 1.25 for every mark x So Fritz will be hoisted with his own petard x

12/6/1918 Sent number p.c's of Lobbes home & Annie x Beautiful mild sunny day x In afternoon 1/2 holiday, & some of us walked to city of Thuin about 4 Kilos distant x Full of N.Z. troops all now waiting in estaminets for a feed - piece of steak & spuds 4 1/2 francs x Hilly city, narrow streets, cobbled x "Dink" band playing on in square x When Belgian national anthem played population stood bareheaded, also when our own was played, clapping at end x Belgian's evidently know our N.A. better than we do theirs x Big canal; diggers enjoying themselves in boats, [--- ---] also a M'llse gave me a Belgian rosette as souvenir x Tongoo My destination for leave taken yesterday x

12/7/1918 Misty day x Going on leave tomorrow - a year to the day since my last x Reporting at Charleroi, (sic) & then to Boulogne x P.c's to Misses Reeve & Norris, Nell, Howie, Eccus, Betty & Huia x # a visit to us Francis Hennard, Hermine Criplot, Julia Somville

12/8/1918 Had an interesting day Charleroi (sic) Francis Hennant Bookkeeper in [-----] Belgium with his wife Julia and a friend of her wife have met two kind New Zealand (sic) Zealand soldiers and spent some hours cheerfully with them They will never forget them and have been very sorry they have not been able to pay

12/9/1918 Left Charleroi (sic) for Boulogne 9.15, change Mons x At Mons told no leave train today, so 3 of us jumped on board an empty train bound for Valenciennes x which we reached about 10 x RTO. said we could stop in billets to night & leave 4 in the morning, or go on by our train x While deciding train moved off & settled question, so we decided to take pot luck with the bus x During journey we obtained a petrol tin, commandeered coal from a mine at Mons, & soon had a fire going x Also got some straw for a bed x We are quite happy, no one to worry us, & getting to see a bit of France this way x A Canadian chap gave us a loaf of bread, meat, butter, &

12/10/1918 9 am; now sitting in the train which has been stuck up nine miles from Arras since 5 x Kept fire going all night, & for breakfast buttered toast & hot beans! Not too bad x We are now in war zone again, & country looks wretchedly desolate x Kept waiting for 18 hours before getting to Arras! Plenty of cussing!

12/11/1918 We were kept waiting outside Arras for 18 hours! Squatted in a truck all time x Lot of cussing! Got to St Poi about 6 am; jumped off for coffee; & had to run to catch train (trucks) which landed us at Boulogne just in time to get leave boat x Folkstone 4.30; London 8, Annies 10.30 x Bon!

12/12/1918 Got to St Poi about 6 am; jumped off for coffee; had to run to catch a train (trucks) which landed us at Boulogne in time to race for the leave boat x Lovely sleep last night x Afternoon went to Wallon & had tea with some Sister friends x Back to Ilford night & spent hour at bazaar with Annie x

12/13/1918 Good sleep last night better than trucks! Went out to Wallon & had tea with some Sister friends x London during day; slow x Left Euston 8.10, Holyhead 2.30; Dublin 7.30 x Good trip, but tiring

12/14/1918 arrived Dublin 7.30 x Nice sunny day x Had look round city; liked it x Saw site of pt where [Pater] lived x Connell's [---] Nelson's Pillar etc x Called on Mr Taylor Bank Ireland x Then went out to Norfolk College x Had look round x Out again in afternoon; met many "old girls" of Aunties, & also the teaching staff x On behalf staff made presentation to Miss FitzPatrick; children's party later x Only man present among about 70 women & girls! Later, with Miss & Mrs L. went to Theatre x Supper, & got home Sunday morning after very enjoyable day x Called on Miss Thompson x

12/15/1918 Jolly good day, alto' pouring rain x In morning went to St Jerome Cemetery, but unable to find Aunt Annie's grave; no guides available on Sunday x Spent 1/2 hr at service Hardie's x; then met Mr & Mrs Taylor Rathmines T.H. & taken to dinner in city; where joined by Miss Taylor x Watched funeral procession of Colman, a Seán Feinier (sic) who had died in prison x Immence concord, paper [expected] that 15,000 followed cask hearse x Trams stopped moving x S. F flags (with black cross) flying & carried x (See other diary for fuller impressions) Back to Taylors for tea, where met another Miss Taylor x Felt quite at home with all the family & enjoyed my time immensely x Later in evening went to see Mrs & Miss Longstaff to bid them good-bye x Mr Little called round to see me; but not there x In morning Mr & Mrs T. called at club for me, but I had gone out x Sent p.c's Dublin to family x

12/16/1918 Fine early part morning x Went to Phoenix Park. On way back called on Mr Little, who knew Holly x at 7 Climbed to top of Nelson's Column; & at 1 o'clock met Miss Connie Taylor & took her to lunch, very enjoyable x Easy went over Trinity College x Caught 3 train for Belfast; arrived there 6 [---] Theatres closed to soldiers on a/c influenza, walked the streets until 11.30 x Looks a fine town; splendid train service x A way up crossed the river Boyne x City good looking very small holdings; mostly grazing x Very quaint cottages x

12/17/1918 Showery x Had good look round the city; very [l--], fine shops, well stocked x Took train to ship bldg yards; had a look at Harland & Woolds; saw ships on dock x The Soldiers & Sailors' Club city fine place x Left at 2.45 for Dublin; Kingston 7; crossed in mail boat; very rough x Arrived Holyhead midnight x Sent p.c's Belfast to family x

12/18/1918 Stayed Holyhead hotel last night; left for Llandudno 7.40; arrived there 10.30 x Rain x Spent cosy afternoon with Aunty & Uncle x In evening went to concert on the prom. hotel x Met several people x Note to Miss Taylor x

12/19/1918 Left Llandudno 9.15, Chester 11.20 x Called at Kings college & took Willie Taylor to lunch at Westminster Hotel; after which he showed me round the city x Bright little chap, & a fine guide x Walked all round historic wall; visited cathedral, the Rows (shops under cover x) City quaint old place, reminding me somewhat of York x Showery x Saw tower on which King Charles witnessed the defeat of his troops on Rowton Moor Sept 24, 1645 x Cathedral and Monastery, 1069 x Saw Jack Conwells' flag in cathedral (off ship Chester) x Invited to tea by house master of college (Mr Woodhouse) & afterward went to school concert x Very enjoyable day x

12/20/1918 Left Chester 9.40 by G.W.R. going thro' Shrewsbury, Leamington etc; wet day x Paddington 3.30 & then on to Ilford x

- 12/21/1918 Had day in town with Annie x Roxana (Doris Keene) afternoon; The Boy" evening; pictures at Marble Arch while waiting for dinner x Had good time; fine, but dull x Home about midnight x
- 12/22/1918 Had a lazy day - I needed it (Brkfast in bed; wrote Mother x Rain at intervals x
- 12/23/1918 In morning city with Annie & Mrs Hawthorn x In co--- Mr have joined us at lunch, & we had a jolly meal x Enjoyed it immensely x Annie had the Pip over something! In evening went to The Man from Toronto" very good
- 12/24/1918 Quiet day at Ilford x Mr H Mrs H spent day with us, & we had jolly time x
- 12/25/1918 Fine, but trifle foggy x Church morning; then walk before dinner x Kids very excited over their presents x Enjoyed dinner immensely x Afternoon all went round to 5 Park Av. & spent jolly time x Youngsters entertained us with dances, songs recitations, etc x Annie & Bert gave me a very nice present book [O---] and the children a handy diary x Thanks!
- 12/26/1918 Morning went to London with Bert & Dick to get my pass stamped x Fine in London but foggy in Ilford x Went thro' Whitechapel & home by 'bus from East Ham x Had a lazy afternoon, & in evening played billiards x Have enjoyed the rest of the last few days x

12/27/1918 Left Annie at 6.15, & got to Victoria Stn in time to catch 8.20 train to Folkstone x Bert came to see me off, for which I was glad x Left Folkstone 2.30 & arrived Boulogne after rather rough trip, two hours later x Dodged the camp & stayed in town, where I obtained a decent nights rest x Raining most of day x

12/28/1918 Left Boulogne in the slowest train it has been my misfortune to ride in x At Etaples I got off train & reported to our base x Wet day x

12/29/1918 Wet day x Called at 46 in afternoon & had tea with Sister MacMahon x Church evening, after which I called on Sister Morris at 46 x I was pleased to see my old nurses again, who had been so kind to me when in hospital x Wrote note to Mother, Holly, Pickles; also to Base P.O, & also to my Battery for mail x

12/30/1918 Wet day x Wrote Aunt Kate x Fooled about during day x Had pleasant evening

12/31/1918 Wet day; fine evening, which I spent in pleasant company x Here endeth my third diary x So long 1918; cant say I am sorry to let you go, although taking everything into consideration, I haven't had a bad time; might have been a great deal worse x Hope to be in good old Nelson this time next year x Na-poo! Happy New Year to all at home x Fini

1/1/1919 Frosty morning; [---] cold day; heavy rain about 7 pm x... Had enjoyable evening x

- 1/2/1919 Weather still unsettled. x... W.A.A.C. concert night x Went into "A" lines & expect to go to Blighty any day x Sent p.c's to Nell, Blanche, Howie, Marion Thornton, Annie & Aunt Amy x
- 1/3/1919 Fine day, wet night x Put on A Guard for German prisoners at 24 Gnl Hsptl, in which there are about 900 sick & orderlies x Good easy job x
- 1/4/1919 Few showers x In afternoon had tea with Sister MacMahon at 46 x Hope to be leaving for Blighty tomorrow or next day x
- 1/5/1919 Racing all day; very cold x Church parade morning; S.A. evening x Wrote Mother, detailing my Blighty leave x
- 1/6/1919 Cold & windy x Getting "fed up" x
- 1/7/1919 Weather ditto x On Quarter Guard; easy job x
- 1/8/1919 Nice sunny day; hope to get away to Blighty tomorrow x
- 1/9/1919 Rain during night x Letter from Cora Mac., Putty, Miss Reece & p.c. Miss Norris x In all probability leaving for U.K. tomorrow! Maori concert evening
- 1/10/1919 Still waiting! Pictures evening x
- 1/11/1919 Ditto! x Wrote Mother; & p.c. to Cora Mac & Daisy x Pictures evening x
- 1/12/1919 Ditto! church morning & evening; pictures afternoon x



1/13/1919 No sign of marching orders x The chaps are becoming restive; & the O.C. camp [a/c] us today stating the shortage of shipping was holding us up x Afterwards the "Bolshevik" element had a mtg & decided to march out tomorrow morning & board a train for Boulogne! Wrote Holly x Pictures night x

1/14/1919 The "march-out" did not come off, saner counsel prevailing x Still, the shake-up may have good result x Letters from Holly, acknowledging my parcels from Mother (2 tins sugar 1 tea) Eccus & [Rene] (2 tins 3 Castle cigs & 2 have tobacco); Annie (cakes, sweets etc) Thornton girls (large cake), Miss Reese (cigs) x Thanks everybody x

1/15/1919 Today was conveyed to us the cheerful information that we wd not leave for Blighty until 21st x There has been a mess-up at Hdqrs x Same old thing! On 1/4 Grd x Fine day; raining night x Wrote Thorntons' & Eccus x (brother) (P.N.N.Z)

1/16/1919 Nice day; heavy showers evening x Letters from Mother (Oct 27) Pickles & Koi x Some of my mail still missing x

1/17/1919 Nice day x Wrote Putty x Pictures evening x

1/18/1919 Nice sunny day - spring like in it's mildness x Went for long cross country walk with a friend of Holly's (Neve) x Diggers concert in Lowry Hut evening x Wrote Mother concluding diary re last push (up to Nov 11) x

- 1/19/1919 Coldest night I have experienced this winter x Clear moonlight x Heavy frost this morning, but dull day x Letter from Aunt Amy & P.C. Annie x Church morning & evening x Nothing definite so far regarding Blighty x
- 1/20/1919 My NZ mail arrived at last - 18 in all x Five from Mother (Sept 17, 22, 29, Oct 1 - 8) with 5/- p.n; Effie (5/- p.n. & 2/6 coupon Mr Tattor) ; Ray, Aunt Kate (2) Blanche, Aubrey, Daisy, Pickels, Matia, Kit, Billy Simpson, Eccus, Bill Evans (photo); & Annie x Très Bon! also pr socks > [---] Annie x (possibly shorthand) Thanks x Bitterly cold day; snow threatening x
- 1/21/1919 Nice day x Wrote Kit & p.c's to all the family x Pictures four S.A. evening x We are told that we are leaving tomorrow for certain! Tin cocoa & milk Mother x
- 1/22/1919 Nice sunny day; rather keen wind x Now (6 pm) waiting to fall in for station, where we entrain at 8 for Le Havre x x Got away at 9 pm x The first stage on the journey HOME!
- 1/23/1919 8 am: Longpre Station x 20 miles in nearly 12 hours! Some going! We passed thro' this town when trekking to the Somme in '16 x Hard frost; slept a little on floor of carriage x For breakfast used Mother's tin cocoa; bon x The carriage I got into by accident is numbered 13 - my lucky number, so I feel quite safe!

- 1/24/1919 Le Havre 8 pm x Kept fooling round in the cold for 1 1/2 hrs before knowing where we were to sleep x Went to Canadian D. mob. camp; bed about 11 x Fine > & sunny < but cold x Went round the docks (full of steamers) afternoon & city, evening x Very fine shops, boulevards etc x
- 1/25/1919 Dull day x Leaving tomorrow for Blighty x Dull day x Pictures evening x
- 1/26/1919 At sea; G.W.R.S.S Ibex; Left Havre 11 am, it is said for Weymouth x Fine; fall of snow early morning x x Anchored in Portland Roads at 9 pm for the night x Smooth trip x Charged us 4d on board for cup of inferior tea (bring our own mugs) x The Ibex has been sunk twice; & has also destroyed a submarine x
- 1/27/1919 Entered Weymouth 9 am x Had feed, then marched thro' town to station x Many of the windows crowded with people who waved flags, handkerchiefs etc at us as we went by x Entrained at 10.30, & reached Amesbury Junction 3 pm; snowing x 1 1/2 [-] march to Lark Hill Camp; Sling is full x Good huts & beds x Sent P.C. to Mother from Weymouth; wire to Annie, & letter at night x
- 1/28/1919 Very cold x Col Stewart a/d us; giving explanation re D. mob x Looks as if the A men will not leave for N.Z. until March; on a mess-up somewhere, & later [rftnts] are getting away first x Just like the army x P.C. to Mother, Holly x Lark Hill is a big well-apptd camp x Medical inspection x

1/29/1919 Cold x Walked to the ruins at Stonehenge; also went over on aerodrome x At night went in YM [with] a party of ladies-splendid concert - the best I have listened to for many a long day x Wrote Miss Norris x Sent p.c's Weymouth to family x Dental inspection x

1/30/1919 Measles Inspection Weather ditto x Wrote Annie x Going on leave tomorrow

1/31/1919 Left Amesbury 1.45, London 6.30; Annie's 8 x Snowing x

2/1/1919 Anniversary Nelson City! Chigwell afternoon with Annie to see Dick x Snowing at intervals x Letters from Mother (Oct 16, 20, Nov. 8, 15, 24,) Kit, Koi, Aunt Kate (3) Miss White, Aunt Amy, Sister Vaggis, Huia (card); tin sugar, tin milk, brandy balls x Mother) 3 tins cigs [old] Pickles, bundles papers Kit, Effie; 2 summaries Harry Finney; advise from Bank; and balaclava cap & mittens from Mother x At Chigwell saw Kings Head Inn, immortalized by Dickens as "The Maypole"

2/2/1919 Stayed at home x Mr & Mrs Gifford spent day with us x Quite a jolly time x Wrote Mother & Kit

2/3/1919 Met Jim Laybourne & spent day in London x Saw Horse Guards changing at Whitehall x Passed Buck. Palace, dinner at Grosvenor Hotel with Jim's Aunt; afternoon tea at Pap x Saw Doug Haig in Piccadilly x No time to have a yarn! Home by bus; calling to see Bill Rose; not at home x Tube strike in London x Got £10 at Bank x

2/4/1919 Met Bill Rose & had interesting day x Walked thro' part East London; Bill pointing out spots (mostly pubs) frequented by Holly & pals many years ago x Saw [--- --- st sensation], also where Jack Ripper committed murder x Thro' Limehouse & to city x Spent 1/2 hr National Gallery, seeing paintings by Millar, Reynolds, Van Dyck & other famous men x Psyche at Bath took my eye most x Then thro Soho, dinner at restaurant x Drury Lane, Bow St Police Station. Newgate Prison, Covent Garden x Tube strike; big rush for busses x Fine, but no sun x

2/5/1919 Rotten day, snow & sleet continually x Went up town with Annie; then to Wyndham's Theatre with her & Mrs Gifford to "The Law Divine" x Devil of job getting bus to Liverpool St Station x Have to wait in snow for some time; each 'bus was mobbed as it came along x Damn the strikers x Not a bad show x

2/6/1919 Took Annie to Bing Boys on Broadway (Geo. Robey & Violet Lorr Lorraine (Alhambra Theatre; [si-- fine] one) x R. & L. very good; the rest mediocre x Evening whist drive at Cheapside x Strikes extending to rlys x Sent p.c's to Mother, Kit, Pickles x Fine day; but little fog x

2/7/1919 Nice sunny day - the first one for nearly fortnight x Went to British Museum with Annie & Mrs Gifford x Very interesting x Dinner in town at Trescotties (sic) & then all home x

2/8/1919 Damn the strikers - caused us no end of trouble today x All three of us (Annie, Mrs G. & self) into town time for luncheon; then to "Hullo America (Palace) (jolly good) Pictures while waiting for dinner (at the Pap) then The Naughty Wife at Playhouse Gladys Cooper & C Hawtry; about the best I have seen x Unable to get bus & in the [e-- -] a crowd of us jumped into a one horse cart; which was in immanent danger of breaking down, & got to Liverpool St just in time to catch last train (12.25) home x And said before - damn the strikers x

2/9/1919 Quiet day at Ilford x Sunny; very hard frost x

2/10/1919 Should have left Waterloo by 10.50 for Ilfracombe, but owing to silly red-tape at Hdqrs I could not get my ticket altered, & [lost] train x Met Sister Barker (Nelson) on platform Had few mins. yarn & cup of tea x Quite a pleasure to meet an old Nelsonian x Left 1 pm & reached Ilfracombe 8.30, being met by Sister Vaggis; both very pleased to see each other x Country very pretty x Jolly good feed for supper x Sister made me come & stop as with her cousin x Sister had obtained a jar of Devonshire cream for me; how I don't know, as a Dr's certificate is needed to obtain it!

2/11/1919 A glorious day's outing x In morning sister took me to Torr's Walk, an enchanting walk over the hills, with the British Channel at the foot x Sunny day x Afternoon, with Mrs Dutch, Miss Hinton Sister & myself, went for a charming drive to Combe Martin; on way sister took me for a walk thro' a real Devonshire lane - holly, ivy, furze & other foliage; showed me house she lived in as child x Glorious country x Church at Combe is one mentioned in Marie Corelli's book "The Mighty Atom" & the grandfather is buried in the churchyard x Church dates 1190 x In evening had singing & Mr Dadds a real old Devonshire countryman; kept us in roars of laughter with his yarns x I do not remember having spent a pleasanter day since leaving N.Z. (p.c's to Mother & Aunt Kate)

2/12/1919 Another grand day; in morning had a walk round farm; & climbed the hill x Afternoon took my friends for drive thro "Morte" & Woolacombe beach x Some music evening x The countryside is charming & I am quite in love with Devonshire x Sister & the others are kindness itself & have helped to make my stay so enjoyable x Only sorry I cannot spend more time with them x (Sister's presents from the hospital - very [nice] x R.R.C.) The old church at Morthoe (sic) about (1300) - holds remains of de Tracey, (sic) who is supposed to have b one of the murderers of Thos A Beckett & also see M Thomas, when a fugitive, lived in this church, which was looked upon as a sanctuary for fugitives, & they could not be touched while here

2/13/1919 Left Ilfracombe, with pleasant memories 9.15, Sister seeing me off x Ilford 5 pm x Whist drive, supper & dance at Seven King's evening; very enjoyable x Letter from Kit (including £5); très bon! & p.c & photo Miss Norris x

2/14/1919 Stayed at home "resting" Tin choc. from Wop & P.C's to Mother & Kit x Rain morning; thawing x

2/15/1919 Letters from Mother (Dec 8 - 15) Aunt Kate, Pickles, Koi Matia x In afternoon went to Woolwich with Annie x Dull day x

2/16/1919 Wet day; stayed at home x Pc's to Koi, Miss White, > Sister MacMahon < Bill Evans, Matia, & letter to Sister Vaggis



2/17/1919 London morning; met several chaps x Met Annie afternoon x  
Went to House Commons & House Lords x Wet day x Lord  
Birkenhead was presiding in Lords x

2/18/1919 Rain & sleet; stayed at home; played billiards x Spent  
evening at Arthur Greer's

2/19/1919 mag. frescoes depicting historic occasions then off to Inner  
Temple & Middle Temple just off The Strand, teaming with  
life to this pretty & quiet & ancient [bldg] spot x Went into  
the banquet halls & churches - very old about 1100 x Saw  
Dickens' Fountain, Dr Johnson's bldgs, Temple church lovely  
place, with beautiful laced arches & stained glass x Also some  
wonderful carvings x Then thro' Daily Mail; printing  
machine turning out 6,000 in 5 mins; employ about 1200  
hands x Then along Thames embkmt Lord Somerset House x  
Also in Bishopgate the oldest church in London, where Henry  
Hudson & his crew took refuge. Went to London afternoon  
with Arthur; who knows his London like a book x Saw more  
of interesting spots in 3 hrs than if we have taken three days  
x At Royal Exchange some

2/20/1919 Fine x Went to Walton on Thames.

2/21/1919 Left London for Slings; couple hours in Salisbury Cathedral,  
outside very fine, beautiful green lawn [---] it stands in x  
Organ playing x Raining hard all day x Tin honey Mother;  
tea choc Joe Stewart x

- 2/22/1919 Nothing day x Showery x Concert night x p.c's to family x
- 2/23/1919 Sunny morning; went long cross-country walk; very pretty landscape x Church morning; wrote Miss Norris; pc Eccus & Pickles evening
- 2/24/1919 Fine; inoculated against "flu" x Wrote Billy Simpson x Pictures evening x 5
- 2/25/1919 Lovely day x Splendid concert > w.c.a < night; Clara's (sic) Butt's pianist accompanying x
- 2/26/1919 Showery; snow night x Still fooling about trying to get fixed up with clothing; medical exam etc x
- 2/27/1919 Two parcels from Mother (sugar, cocoa, etc, & a little pudding (w/ 3d in it) from Eff; plum pudding Aunt Kate; letter Annie & some cigars x The hut has been isolated, on a/c of measles x Looks as if I will miss the boat on the 7th March x D---- ! Saw "The Blindness of Virtue" Wrote Sister Vaggis x
- 2/28/1919 Letters from Mother (Dec. 2) Holly, Aubrey, > Annie < Miss Thornton, Pickles, Cousin Louie, Sister Vaggis, Aunt Amy x Nice sunny day; had walk over the hills x Band concert night x Plum pdg Aunt Kate, tin sugar, biscuits; & tin cocoa, sugar etc, & small p. p. from Eff & Mother x Many happy returns Pickles
- 3/1/1919 Fine x Went to "The Peg of My Heart", very good x Wrote Mother

- 3/2/1919 M.O informed us this morning that we will be in isolation for 3 weeks; so no [M] for some time yet x p.c. to Annie & letter to Aunty Amy x Walked to see the chestnut tree & smithy mentioned in "The Village Blacksmith"
- 3/3/1919 Letter from Annie x Shifted to Lark Hill isolation camp x Told us in morning we had to go; but were not sent until late in evening; 4 mile walk; arrived in strange camp in dark; camp people did not know we were coming; & we had to fool around in dark getting fixed up x Just like the army; if there is a wrong way of doing things, they do it!!
- 3/4/1919 Rain all day x Wrote Ray x
- 3/5/1919 Rain x
- 3/6/1919 Sunny day' walked across - country, visiting an aerodrome x
- 3/7/1919 Rain all day x
- 3/8/1919 Showery x Wrote Sister Vaggis x Garrison Theatre evening x
- 3/9/1919 Wrote Mother x Long walk afternoon; church evening x
- 3/10/1919 Wrote Holly x Showery x Letters from Mother (Jan 13) Kit, Koi, Pickles, Aunt Kate, & Ray x Parcels from Annie & Louie x Thanks!
- 3/11/1919 Showery x "Freedom of the Seas" at Garrison Theatre at night; not at all bad x
- 3/12/1919 Wet day x Letter from Annie x

- 3/13/1919 Fine sunny morning; rain afternoon x "Billeted" at Garrison Theatre evening; very good x Letter Miss Norris x Wrote Annie & Holly x
- 3/14/1919 Wrote Miss Norris x Letter from Annie & Uncle Geo x Fine day; concert evening x A "demonstration was made by the chaps at Slings camp x Not surprised, as demobilization is taking very long time x Night make up [----]
- 3/15/1919 Fine day: wrote Annie x At the "dust up" at Slings several canteens & the officers mess were gone thro'; said that considerable amount damage done x
- 3/16/1919 Fine; letter from Annie x Mild evening x Going out of isolation tomorrow, as result of demonstration at Slings several concessions have been made to the men x The officers piques (sic) for purpose of catching men not saluting, has also been abolished x Men must also go back in their turn; not been the case so far x
- 3/17/1919 Came out isolation & went back to Slings x Fine day x
- 3/18/1919 Fine x Concert evening x
- 3/19/1919 Snow & rain x Wrote Mother, Pickles, Louie & Billy Simpson x
- 3/20/1919 Fine day x Pictures afternoon x Snow all day - the first one of Spring! On boat role (Northumberland) to leave Liverpool on 28th x
- 3/21/1919 Fine, but cold x Went to Codford to see eye specialist x

- 3/22/1919 Snow morning; afternoon fine x "Freedom of Seas" evening x Letter from Holly x
- 3/23/1919 Slight fall snow; very cold x Letter from Annie; tin tobacco Matia; NZWCA x Wrote Sister Macmahon, Miss Norris, Reeve, & Aunty & Uncle x Pictures evening x
- 3/24/1919 Went to Salisbury met Annie; spent afternoon there x Fine but cold x
- 3/25/1919 Fine day x "Our Miss Gibbs" at night x We Northumberland draft inspected by Genl Stewart; he took quite an interest in my personal appearance; asked me when I showered last; did I shave every day; if not why not? Also wanted to know if my tunic was the best one I had!
- 3/26/1919 A wash out x Still here x Sunny day x Sent telegram Sister Vaggis x Letters from Aunt Amy & Uncle Geo x 'Buckshee' parcel from Otago P.A. "Mail" from Effie x
- 3/27/1919 Early morning heavy showers x Sent cable "home" [paying] for same with a sov. which I have carried since leaving N.Z. in '15 x Entraining at Bulford siding early tomorrow morning x "Yes Uncle" at night x

3/28/1919 Fell in 1 am, train moved off 3.30; passing thro' Reading, Oxford, Birmingham, Crewe to Liverpool x At Bir British Rail supplied tea, biscuits & oranges x Arrived Liverpool during sleet shower x An orphanage band (all youngsters) played selections in shed alongside boat; ending up with Auld Lang Syne and then lining the wharf & singing with their child's voices "God be with you" x Showers of coins fell on them during their playing, & we exchanged cheers with them x Boat sailing early tomorrow morning x Grand National run today at Liverpool, being won by Poethlyn x (sic) The engine of our train was no 1351 x

3/29/1919 Fine & sunny, but stiff breeze x Cleared the docks at 10, & lay in Mersey until 5, when we sailed for N.Z x Beatty's flagship Queen Elizabeth lying in stream x Dropped pilot after crossing bar x As he left in the cockle-shell of a boat for his tug his last words were "Good old Diggers", & a wave of the hand x Gave him a cheer x About dusk now, & we had a last look at good old Blighty - our first & only port call [--] Herald, ooo America (Newton News)

3/30/1919 Fine sunny day; stiff breeze; ship very steady x During afternoon caught last sight of Irish coast which had been on our starboard all day x Tucker so far very good & ample x On Friday night when getting our hammocks we found a youngster underneath them x He had stowed away, & is still with us!

3/31/1919 Sunny day & warm x Overtook two ships x Sea smooth x Pictures in afternoon! Read "The Truants" (Lucas); not a bad yarn x For the previous 24 hours to midday we did 354 miles x Went thro' the sprayer x

4/1/1919 Very calm; hard to realize that we are in mid-Atlantic x Deck games have made their appearance, & everyone seems to be having a good time x The food so far has been good & ample - have never been better fed since I joined the army x Read "Anna the Adventuress" (Oppenheim); not bad x also "Little Comrade" (E. Stevenson) x More spraying

4/2/1919 Lovely sunny warm day x Hardly a ripple on the ocean x Another spraying; all microbes should be dead by now

4/3/1919 Strong breeze; sea little choppy; but boat very steady x

4/4/1919 Bit lumpy during last night & we shipped a few seas today, however has been very calm x Passed several vessels during the evening, including a warship - four funnels; she "morsed" to us, but our lamp was out of order x A week out tonight x Should reach Newport News Monday evening on early Tuesday x

4/5/1919 Not a ripple on the ocean; lovely day x Week out from Liverpool; to now we have made 2300 miles x Picture show on deck at night; good oo show - & in mid-Atlantic read "The Londoners" (Hitchens); very good x

4/6/1919 Half-a-gale of wind blowing; sea choppy; roughest day so far x Showers at night x In evening had to slow down to  $\frac{1}{2}$  speed pm ac/ (sic) of engine trouble x Service morning; but not much of a success owing to wind x Wrote Annie & Aunt Amy x 287 miles (Read Meadowsweet (Orczy))

4/7/1919 From early morning until late afternoon we were in a thick fog; the steamers whistle was blowing every few mins x In evening Later on sun came thro'; fog cleared & sea very smooth x Pictures on deck evening; Count of Monte Christo (sic) x Not likely to reach port till late tomorrow x



4/8/1919 Beautiful day x Pictures at night "David Copperfield" (6 parts) x Dropped anchor outside Newport News > in Hampton Roads < about midnight 257 miles x went to Norfolk x A circus [prpte] invited them to his show (backstage) & gave had the band to meet them & played them w arias x On leaving he supplied each man with a bun & two sausages! U.S.A. Govt. allow no railway concessions to soldiers x Voted on liquor question (in dry state) x

4/9/1919 Pilot aboard 9, & anchored in strt am off N.N. morn; but did not get ashore until 6.30 Digger" x Spent evening Newport News x City of mushroom growth; military & nerve centre; disembarkation port for Yanks x Street decorated for their home-coming x In big letters on pier were words "Oh Boy! Oh Joy! x Home again x Hello Typical Yank city as seen in pictures! Had an invitation to a revival mtg on tomorrow x Sent p.c's to Aunt Amy, Annie & sister Mac. Marr & [Ree-]

4/10/1919 Went (w/ Joe D & P. Payn) to Richmond, 2 hrs journey in Chesapeake Ohio Railway x Very poor country; swamp x [---] etc x Had lovely time at Richmond; Miss Lathrop, with Miss Norris, took us round in her car, & we saw some fine villas, parks, streets & went Country Club x Also statue of confederate leader Jefferson Davis, Lee, Washington x visited St Paul's church (see elsewhere) & Capital x Veris

- 4/11/1919 Left at 7.30 am for Colon (Panama) x Dropped Pilot later on in Chesapeake Bay; sea bit rough by night, & we shipped fair quantity of water x But the old boat proved a good steady one x 3 officers missed the boat; & several others (officers) just caught it x
- 4/12/1919 Shipped good deal water during night, & also this morning x Strong wind & sea running; also foggy & rain up till late afternoon x Passed thro an American [--- ----] T B. D. squadron about 4 - between forty & fifty vessels in all x Fog spoilt full effect of picture x Calm evening; pictures x
- 4/13/1919 Heat almost tropical; sea a deep soft blue with not a ripple on its broad surface x Church for all morning x Reading Captain Macklin (Richard Harding Davis) x Been passing thro' a lot of fine seaweed x Saw a couple of bottle nosed whales x
- 4/14/1919 Deck aw[In]ings up and we are lolling about with as few clothes on as decency permits x Passed more islands during day, & came abreast of Cuba before dusk (compare action Spanish Fleet at Santiago with Hun fleet in 1918) x Full moon, throwing [---] bac irregular [>---< ---] of rippling water from horizon to ship's side x Pictures in evening; also lecture by R.N.R. man on Submarines: methods of attack & defense x Learned about [Wednesday] x Wrote Holly & Annie x

- 4/15/1919 Heat very trying; just to move about makes one perspire x Sea calm & blue x Lantern lecture evening on Panama Canal x Tonight we slept under the Southern Cross x
- 4/16/1919 Phew! Heat about the limit x Should reach Colon tonight x Concert x When we got to Panama we were 25 miles further from N.Z. than when we started!
- 4/17/1919 Commenced going thru' Canal  $\frac{1}{4}$  to  $\frac{7}{8}$ , & were in the Pacific about 5 pm Very interesting day; intensely hot x At the different locks the residents came down & threw us fruit & bundles of [magazines] x Heard news that [C-----] carried in N.Z. Great excitement among the trusty souls x As the pilots tug was about to leave us at Panama our band played Star Spangled Banner & Yankee Doodle, cheers exchanged x
- 4/18/1919 Pictures off; orders from Bill of Trade to this effect x Rain all day; made air very cool & pleasant x Lat lon 5.10 N 81.30 W 253 Liverpool to Panama 5176 Lat long D.59N 85.10W 334
- 4/19/1919 Crossed the line betn 8 & 9 pm x Some of the crew paid their respect to Father Neptune x Nice cool day x Glorious starlight night; heavens thick with stars. best view of Southern Cross since we first saw it x We are expected to reach Wellington about 7th May x

- 4/20/1919 EASTER DAY Hot day; showers evening Church Service morning x Passed several islands in the Gl Galapagus (?) Archípaelgo x Cahu x (sic) Lat Long 1.45S, 90.03W 343 Lat Long 4.55S 94.41W 337
- 4/21/1919 Very warm; concert evening x The ocean stretches below with a great distance of deep beautiful blues x Tumbling wavelets were chasing each other over it, & millions of white caps glanced & flashed as they [rode] by the ship x The restlessness of it stirred me & the freedom of it stirs one with "great happiness x
- 4/22/1919 Fine day; cooler x Níg Concert at night x Read "Old Judge Priest" (Irvin Cobb) x Lat Long 8.20S 99.12W. 338 Lat Long 11.33S 103.34 323
- 4/23/1919 Cross sea running x Fine x
- 4/24/1919 Not a ripple on the water x Cooler x Read "A Strange Visitation" (Corelli) Lat Long 14.27S 108.21W 329 Lat Long 17.11S 113.33W 342
- 4/25/1919 Anzac Day x Sports x Another smooth sea; just a gently heaving swell, with the sea surface like glass x
- 4/26/1919 Fine x Read "The Other Wise Man" (Van Dyke Lat Long 19.36S 118.39W 324 22.155S, 123.39W 323
- 4/27/1919 Lovely day; nice cool breeze, blue sea & all that sort of thing x Church service, padre making special reference to Anzac Day x Sing-song night x

4/28/1919 weather ditto x This afternoon passed Pitcairn Island close enough to see with naked eye several houses; also a flag flying x Three small boats sailing off islands, & hauled up flag as we passed them x Small island, with rocky headland, rest very green; houses in a pretty little dip in hill x Earlier passed another island, low lying & flat; not inhabited x  
24.35S 129.03W 336      26.20S 134.5.3W 33 L

4/29/1919 Calm – not even a swell x Debate on the Govt scheme for settling soldiers on land x Reading 26.20S 134.5.3W 336

4/30/1919 28.00S x 140.60W 330 Showery; much cooler; slight swell

5/1/1919 29.58S 146.29W 323 Sunny day; sea like glass x One of the pleasantest days we have had x Read "The Fair God" (Wallace) tale of conquest of Mexico; very good x

5/2/1919 Another fine day x Debate "Should the Returned Soldiers Assn be a political body decided in the negative by a big majority x Read "Helm of the High Hand" (Arnold Bennett)  
31.27S 152.45W 336

5/3/1919 33.34S 158.52W 334 Half a gal[le] of wind came up during the night & lasted until evening x Good tossing about – about the worst one have had but even this was not very bad x

5/4/1919 Still strong wind & showery x Thanksgiving service by Padre x Should reach Wellington Thursday morning x 35.50S 164.50W 324

5/5/1919 37.26S (?) 169.50W 261 Gale increasing x When we came on deck this morning found ocean lashed into a white fury x Tremendous sea running; huge billows; gale wind x Did only 135 miles to midday; instead of our average of about 330 x will make us late in arriving Wellington x

5/6/1919 To conform to N.Z. time today is "cut out" & is Wednesday x 38.145S 172.32W 135

5/7/1919 When we came on deck this morning found ocean lashed into a white fury; tremendous sea running; huge billows; gale wind x Did only 135 miles for previous 24 hrs, instead of usual 330 x Will not reach Wellington tomorrow as expected x Gale abated 5pm, & we speeded up x

5/8/1919 40.06S 177.52W 275 Wind continues strong; but sea much calmer x Will arrive in Wellington tomorrow x 275

5/9/1919 Telegram from Thorntons, Eccus x Note Putty x Fine day; rather foggy approaching Palliser Pt, which we sighted about 11; going very slow in feeling our way down to it x Anchored in Wellington harbour 4; had to stay on board all night; another piece of red tape, as we have cleared health authorities by 5 x Sent wires Mother, Pickles, Bill, Blanche, Koi x

5/10/1919 Wellington x

5/11/1919 HOME! Wellington

5/12/1919 Left Wellington

5/13/1919 HOME!







































































































































































































































































































































































































